This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07437886 4

Palmerin of England,

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

CORRECTED BY

ROBERT SOUTHEY,

FROM THE ORIGINAL PORTUGUEZE.

Imerin of England

Palmerin of England,

by

Francisco de Moraes.

VOL. III.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR LONGMAN, HURST, REES, AND ORME,
PATERNOSTER ROW.

1807.

LL 9

W. Pople, Printer,
22, Old Boswell Court, Strand.

CONTENTS.

VOL. III.

Chap.		Page
95.	*Of what befel Palmerin in the adventure of the enchantment of Lionarda princess of Thrace* -	1
96.	*Of what farther befel Palmerin in this adventure* - -	9
97.	*How the enchantment of Lionarda was ended* - - -	19
98.	*Of what Palmerin did while he remained in the court of Thrace* -	30
99.	*Of what befel Florendos after he left the castle of Dramorante the Cruel* - - -	40
100.	*Of what befel Florendos after he left the castle of Arnalta* -	54

CONTENTS.

Chap.

101. *Of the embassage which the damsel of Thrace bore to the emperor's court; and of what befel the knight of the Tyger* - - -

102. *Shewing what past between the knight of the Tyger and the knights who were in pursuit of the damsel*

103. *Of what befel the knight of the Savage after he left the court of the emperor Vernao* - -

104. *Of what happened to the knight of the Savage before he parted from the damsel* - - -

105. *How the giant's knights delivered up their castles to the knight of the Savage, and of what passed when Florendos arrived at the castle of Almourol* - - -

106. *Of the battle which Florendos fought for the shield of Miraguarda on the second day after his arrival* -

107. *Of an adventure which happened at the castle of Almourol, and of what Florendos did* - -

CONTENTS.

Chap.		Page
108.	*Shewing who the knight of Arnalta was, and the reason why he came there; and of the arrival of Lionarda at the court of the emperor Palmerin* - - -	144
109.	*Of Lionarda's reception at Constantinople* - -	159
110.	*Of an adventure which came to the emperor's court, and what happened thereupon* - - -	176
111.	*Shewing who the damsel was, and what happened upon the voyage*	190
112.	*Of what befel the knight of the Tyger in this adventure* - -	201
113.	*Of what happened to him of the Savage after his landing* -	220
114.	*Of what the knight of the Savage did going with his damsels to the court of Spain, and of what befel him of the Tyger in his voyage to the Profound Island* - -	232
115.	*Of the battle between the giant Pavoroso and the knight of the Tyger, and three others on each side* -	250

CONTENTS.

Chap.		Page
116.	*Of what the knight of the Tyger did before he left the island* -	265
117.	*Of what the knight of the Tyger did in the Perilous Island* -	282
118.	*How Alfernao came to the court of Constantinople, and of what happened there* -	303
119.	*How the prisoners came whom the Great Turk had held captive, and how Albayzar was released* -	314
120.	*How the knight of the Damsels reached the court of Spain, and of what passed between him and Albayzar* - - -	332
121.	*Of the great jousts between the knight of the Damsels and Albayzar* - - -	345
122.	*Of what befel the knight of the Damsels going to the castle of Almourol* - - -	360
123.	*How Trofolante and the others arrived at the court of Spain, and the knight of the Damsels at the castle of Almourol* - -	373

CONTENTS.

Chap. Page

124. *Of the great jousts, between the knight of the Damsels and the keeper of the shield of Miraguarda, and of the battle between him and Almourol* - - - 385

125. *Of what befel the knight of the Damsels returning to the court of Spain* - - - 399

CHAPTER 95.

The lords of the kingdom of Thrace led Palmerin to a hill, from whence they showed him the place where Lionarda remained enchanted. Now as the day was clear, at the foot of the hill he beheld in a pleasant valley some brave and stately towers among the green trees, a goodly sight to behold; for not only was the valley wherein they were edified as fresh and delightful a place as nature could make, but also the edifices and palaces displayed such numerous pinnacles and sumptuous varandas of marble, so white and lofty, that they seemed to touch the sky; with other surpassing devices and inventions, so worthy of admiration that he thought

them to be framed by the celestial powe
rather than by any earthly creatures.

Well was Palmerin pleased to see a thin
so pleasant; and though at that time hi
spirit was as it were dead with the longin
remembrances which tormented it, yet th
beauty of the place stirred in him a certai
lively joy, and he thought how fair a lo
would be his who should enjoy it, togethe
with Lionarda; a lot which, however fair, h
wished not for himself, nothing sufficing fo
him, but only the hope he had of his service
and merits with Polinarda. After he ha
stayed awhile, beholding the manner of th
valley, and thinking of the dangers whic
had been menaced, holding them in littl
seeing that the place rather promised to d
light the senses than to dismay the heart, h
began to think lightly of the enterpriz
which in truth a wise man ought not to ha
done, because that divers times the doub
fullest things have the pleasantest issue; an
that which seemeth most pleasant at the b
ginning, doth prove to be the sharpest da
ger in the ending. But as in Palmerin th

contempt of the danger arose from his surpassing hardihood, and from the many dangers which he had happily gone through, and this seemed to threaten none; he is the less worthy of blame.

One of the knights that kept him company then advanced from among the others; he was a man of great authority, for his grey hairs, and the quality of his person, and the experience of things which many years had shewn him. Sir knight, said he to Palmerin, to whom fortune hath alway been so great a friend, that in no danger or distress hath she ever played you false, not for this, your accustomed prosperity, should you cease to fear dangers, which to appearance may seem little; for she who in great things hath been willing to forward you, may peradventure in lesser ones forsake you, for the greater proof of her power: moreover, nothing should be judged of by its first appearance, seeing from such judgment errors arise for which afterwards there is no remedy. This I say, because the adventure which you are about to essay seemeth in its beginning more made for

contentment than to be feared. But I
have you know, that this contentment
be gained by danger, and perchance
you find yourself in it, you will find it g
than you thought for.

Sir, answered Palmerin, your counsel,
ing so great good will, deserves a gu
which I cannot now bestow; and indeed
words are full of truth. I am right tha
that you have given me so good a less
bear in mind hereafter; God grant tha
may have the end which we all desire,
if I speed to my wish, I will not be un
ful of your friendly warning. This pr
presented with so great humanity, infi
a sudden envy in the hearts of some
present, who for the hope they had
him king, began to enter into more p
than any true or faithful subject would
For they began to persuade him, that
venture, how dangerous soever it p
might astonish his person: but he dec
from such praise as was the daily gif
work of flatterers, set spurs to his
and rode down the hill.

An example surely worthy of great praise to all princes and rulers living on the earth, that they should not incline and lean to such, who only study with sweet words, flattering tales, and false reports, to rest and bring them asleep in so vile an exercise. Which painted faces if they would surpass, their subjects, friends, and servants, should be equally regarded, their renown plentifully increased, and accordingly honoured; yea, the virtuous should be richly rewarded, and the vicious rightfully for ever reproached; then would not the plain dealer be governed by such as have been noted, but the good should be openly discerned from the evil, and all enjoy one hope for a continual quiet: but to our matter. As soon as Palmerin pricked forward, the light began to darken, the air to be marvellously troubled, and misty, so that the lords of Thrace lost sight of him, and could not even see one another; and there was loud thundering, and great earthquakes, and other fearful signs, so they were overcome with such fear, that some fell before their horses, being astounded; others lost their stirrups and clung to the horses' necks,

and thus they made their way to the city, tearing their cloaks in the thickets, neither remembering the road nor any thing else. But as the signs that day were different from what they had been at any former time when this adventure had been essayed, the city itself was overspread with so thick and black a cloud, and filled with sounds so dolorous and dismayful, that no one had either judgment so free, or heart so strong, as to be exempt from the fear which these terrors occasioned.

Selviam, whom Palmerin had ordered to stay upon the hill, seeing his master as he deemed in such danger, forgot all fear, and being guided by the love with which he served him, spurred his horse to follow him. But as the nature of the enchantment was, that no one could enter the forbidden ground, except by great prowess and force of arms, he found himself suddenly in the city, without knowing how he came there, in company with the rest, and at such time as the cloud was beginning to disperse: Palmerin, meantime, remembering the words of the old knight, perceived the error of his first

opinion; for he knew not whither he went in that thick darkness, nor could he resist an inward pain, which seemed as if it would have rent his heart; whereat he greatly marvelled, thinking that nothing but his own passion could have touched him there. And now, certain invisible bodies approached him, and by force plucked him from the saddle, and threw him down; and though to defend himself he drew his sword, and struck on all sides, he found that his blows did no harm, for they were smitten against the air. Then he thought to mount on horseback again, but his labour was in vain; it was not possible for him to find his horse, which was far enough away, and presently, not only his sword was taken from him, but likewise all his armour was caught away on a sudden; whereat he began to stand in some fear, as knowing that strength hath need of arms to execute its purpose. Finding himself thus disarmed, and weary with striving to seize these bodies which were without souls, he sate himself down, not knowing what to do, and holding that the adventure was impos-

sible to be atchieved, for he could see n
with whom to fight; and even if he had s
any, he was spoiled of all implement
offence or defence. The darkness
came every minute more and more;
could neither go forward nor return; whe
fore he said to himself, Certes, there
more adventures in the world than n
suspect; and let not him who is with
mishap wish to enter into them, for
who fears it least will find it, and they w
have longest avoided it cannot escape
last.

CHAPTER 96.

The history saith that Palmerin remained some time sitting upon the ground, deliberating with himself what he should do; and seeing that in these cases there was no room for counsels, he rose without any determination, committing himself to the difficulties which fortune might ordain, and careless what might happen, even if it were the end of his life, which he was resolved to sell as dearly as he could, believing that he who does what he can when dying, satisfies with his life what he owes to honour. Still it troubled him to see himself without arms, fearing that for lack of them he could not fulfil his intention. But what most dismayed him was, to feel his soul so depressed within him,

that his limbs seemed to be almost deprived of their wonted virtue. And now there came from the hill above, a mighty and terrible thundering, that he expected the earth would have opened under him. With this he heard fearful hollow voices, and when the rolling sounds reached him, then was he snatched up a mighty height, and presently let fall, so that he thought himself descending to the abyss. These fears, however, he underwent as one who expected worse; what he most grieved at being that they were of such a nature that resistance could not be made. At this time the darkness began to clear away, when he found himself to be in the midst of a little island, enclosed round about with a water so black and deep, that it seemed as if it came from the centre of the earth. In the midst of this islet Palmerin espied an old withered tree, and underneath it stood a knight armed in his own lost armour, with his sword likewise in his hand, who said unto him, Now, O thou valiant knight, I would fain see what thy courage will avail, or by what means thou canst defend thyself from the wrath of my hands,

hich with the edge of thy own sword will
angle thy flesh and bones, whereon the
ild beasts of the country shall feed: so that
y renown, famed over all the whole earth,
all here take full end, where none can ap-
roach to bear witness of thy death.

f a truth, he who should say that Palmerin
as at this time free from the fears which
ch a danger might well bring upon him,
ight say what he pleased; for his heart,
ough it were always accompanied with all
rtue and all courage, at that hour was not
, in that he was destitute of any thing for
s defence in this extremity; and seeing
at he had to defend himself with nothing
t the limbs which nature had given him,
gainst an armed enemy, who, according to
s proportions and semblance, was no little
be feared, committing himself to the will
f fortune, though things of honour ought
t to be committed to her, yet being in such
state that there was no other remedy, he
pproached the knight, who with all fierce-
ess advanced to meet him with his lifted
word. A dark cloud suddenly overshadowed

them; but in the cloud, though he saw him not, Palmerin seized him in his arms, and the other thrust his sword into his breast up to the hilt, he feeling such pain as if he had indeed received so deadly a thrust; and though against such a fear no courage could suffice, yet was his such that it never forsook him, and he grappled with that phantom, till by fine force at length he overthrew; then meaning to cut off his head, at the instant when he drew the sword out of his own body, the cloud dispersed, and he found himself with it in his hand, and his armour under the tree, but the knight was gone.

Amazed at these things, but seeing that what was at first so fearful proved at last to be fantastic and vain, he began to recover confidence, and donned his armour, wherewith he felt his strength increased, and a lively hope of more wonders, being now disposed to be delighted with them. Presently the day cleared, and he could see every thing as far as the eye could reach, and then on the other side beyond the island, in the midst of a green field and among goodly trees, he

e edifices which he had seen from
; but there was no way of crossing
, because of that great water which
en spoken of, except by swimming;
s he feared to attempt, having no
rein. Moreover, the bank on both
is so steep that its height appeared
urable. Now seeing that he had this
e to descend, and neither knowing
could get up on the opposite side, nor
could get to it, for the weight of his
would drown him, he was so con-
, that neither was his courage sufficient
duce him to attempt it, nor his un-
ling to console him. There seemed
remedy, and for his more dismay, on
r side of the water he espied a com-
monstrous and mishapen beasts, who
to be waiting there to devour him;
if they were quarrelling who should
rst to fall on him, they began a fu-
tle, some helping others, so that it
ike a challenge and pitched battle,
ainst party. This Palmerin judged
e of the most notable things that
ad seen: for while the battle conti-

nued many of them spoiled and killed one another, howling the while so loudly, that it was heard in the city as though they were in the midst of it, so that the fear there was greatly increased, for they thought that Palmerin was surely in some great danger. He who resented the most fear was Selviam, grieving that he was not present with his lord, to go through the same dangers, with that true love of a faithful servant, which masters for the most part understand so well, and so ill requite. The fury of this battle was so great, that at last all who were engaged in it lay dead upon the field.

Their grievous fight being thus ended, Palmerin went about the island, to see where he might have passage to the other side. At last, in one part where the waters made a resting-place, he espied a boat, having four oars in it, which were handled and governed by four beasts of marvellous bigness, each one tied with a mighty chain, and at the poop sate a mighty lion, all imbrued in blood, as though he were master of the passage, who fed himself with nothing else but the flesh of his passengers.

While Palmerin was beholding this fearful oat, he espied a man on the farther side, rying to the beasts to carry him over with iem; whereat he was much amazed, as hinking no man to be so foolish as to haard himself in so perilous a river with such oatmen, and under such a pilot. The boat ut off to take him in, and the man was no ooner entered, but the lion seized him in is paws, and with his mighty claws straightay rent him in pieces, and devoured him, iving part to his companions, the rowers; or this was their ordinary food. Any one nay conceive in what state was Palmerin's eart, when he beheld all this, for he saw o way to pass but the terror of death was oth before and behind him; but seeing there as no remedy, for if he remained in the let he must needs die for want of food, so a last resolution, he concluded to put himlf to the rigour of the beasts, and shift ith them by strength of arms; for he saw mself wholly destitute of any other hope. ereupon he looked how he might descend, it there was no other way except by a rock hich reached down to the water side,

and which 'was so slippery and steep, that there was nothing on which he could lay hold, or stay himself; and he thought that he must needs be dashed to pieces before he could reach the bottom. This made him demur a little; and as this extreme danger was so greatly to be dreaded, he addressed himself to the remedy which he alway reserved for the worst perils, that is, to the remembrance of his lady, with which he was accustomed to surmount all, how great and terrible soever they might be. And having invoked her, he felt his fear gone, and without farther dread or delay let himself slide down the rock; but as all those dangers were in truth no otherwise dangerous than in appearance, he attained the river-side without any harm: the lion and his fellows pushed off from the opposite shore to receive him into the boat; and he perceiving this, drew his sword, and with shield advanced, made ready for the adventure. But for this adventure such readiness, which is elsewhere so profitable, was nothing needed, for all were but phantasms and unreal shapes; and so soon as the prow was run ashore, and he

had leapt in, he saw none to attack, for forthwith that strange pilot and his boatmen were gone, he knew not how, and he found himself alone in the boat: then taking the oars, he rowed himself to the farther side; but when he had crost the river, the opposite bank was so steep and overhanging, that he could by no possible means climb up; so that he was again utterly at a loss how to proceed. Being thus confounded, presently he saw an old and broken basket lowered down to him from the top of the rock, by a rope which was so weak and slender, that he thought the mere weight of the basket would have broken it. When Palmerin perceived that there was no other means of ascending that great height, once more trusting in the remembrance of her whom he served, he thought to lay aside his arms, that he might be less heavy; and disarming himself he was about to get into the basket with nothing but his sword. But as many times the heart feels within itself foreboding doubts of what is to come, a fear came upon him which made him put them on again, thinking they might still be necessary. Then, trusting to fortune and abiding the chance, he got into

the basket, and without seeing any one hoist him, was raised into the air, but w so slow and swaying a motion, that the de doubled his fear. And now when he wa a great height, he saw that the basket be to break, and the cord give way with weight, and untwist itself, so that at last thing but a single thread was left, wh was almost invisibly small. Certes, thou he had already suffered many fears, this the worst of all, for he saw himself in last extremity, being suspended in hea by a single hair. This made him again take himself to his lady for help, as the c one in whom he trusted in such need; as it is by faith alone that we must stan fall, so this faith which he had in his l was of such avail, that overcoming the sl ness of the enchantment, in one momer brought him up, and landed him abov the field where the battle of the beasts been, of which he could now see no s neither of the water below. The disapp ance of these things which had caused such fear, giving him now a new joy, wl dissipated all his sorrows, as joy when unexpected is ever wont to do.

CHAPTER 97.

The day was now spent, and the moon, which was then full and in her strength, having no clouds to oppose or obscure her, began to rise in the East with a splendour which seemed almost unnaturally bright. The nightingales and other birds with which that land abounded began to welcome the night with such variety of songs and rejoicing, that Palmerin forgot all his past troubles. And laying himself down under a tree, intending to listen to them, fatigue so overpowered him, that he fell asleep, not having eaten all that day, food indeed being little needed by him: for though without it nature cannot be sustained, yet, when the spirits are roused by difficulties, the very occasion administers

strength to the limbs, provided it be not over long; for of long want nature is incapable, and thereby in course becomes weak and broken down, and finally perishes. Palmerin past as peaceful a night as he had painful a day. When the dawn appeared, the birds awoke him with a song so joyous to hear, and so delightful to muse upon, that he wished the day had tarried longer, to have let him longer enjoy so sweet contentment. But as these follow their appointed order, it was not long before they forsook him, bright day-light, and their custom of seeking food, making them disperse. Palmerin rose, and looking round the field, well pleased at its beauty, beheld towards the East the towers and edifices which he had seen from the hill yesterday, surrounded with the same goodly trees; and though in this there was no show of danger, what he had already witnessed taught him still to apprehend it; on the other hand, the same experience taught him to have little fear. He had not advanced far towards them, before he espied his horse tied to a tree, saddled and bridled, and in such case as when he left him; at which he

marvelled, being now accustomed to wonders of this land. So mount- pon him, he rode a little further, where et with two knights, who were of great re, and clad in the brightest and richest ıur that he had ever seen; and they, out any words, couched their spears ıst him. He encountered the first full ı his shield, and the knight presently va- :d away: the second burst his lance upon

Palmerin veered round to requite him a blow of his sword, but he vanished in manner as the other.

ı Palmerin looking about, espied some about to draw up a bridge, which the passage over a moat of one of the :rs: at this he clapt spurs to his horse, galloped thither apace, so that he cross- he bridge before they could raise it, and ıre they could fasten the gate forced his with them into a court, which was sur- ıded with fair apartments. But though manner of this was worthy to be admired, giants who came out with huge maces heir hands did not give him leisure for

this. This danger was more welcome to Palmerin than the others which he had past; so leaping from his horse, he advanced on foot to attack them with his wonted courage. The battle was soon finished, for all that they were designed to do was in appearance, and as soon as he touched them they dissolved into air, of which they were made. Then seeing that all the dangers which had threatened him were illusions, he determined all which might yet present themselves to him as nothing more.

And now looking to see how he might ascend into the building, he perceived a little gate under some arches, and from thence a flight of steps ascended so steep, that it was a labour to climb them, so narrow that it was with difficulty a man could get up between the walls, and so long, that the top of them was out of sight. Palmerin, desirous to see the end of his labours, adventured to go up, and when he was a little way up the walls about him began to shake vehemently, so that sometimes he thought the vaulted roof would fall in and crush him; at other

s he was so squeezed between the sides
he could not move. Long it was before
ould gain the top, but then the shaking
ed, and he found himself in a long open
ry, which was of marvellous workman-
. At the end thereof there was a great
r, made fast with three great locks and
s of iron, and before the door lay a
hty serpent, whose horrible bigness not
filled up the door-way, but likewise
t part of the gallery; the countenance of
serpent was such, that the very sight of
ruck fear to the heart; and his eye above
as so watchful, that it seemed hopeless
tempt aught against him by slight, if
ould not be obtained by force. About
neck, upon a string, were hanged the
that should open the three locks. Then
nerin perceived that whoever would enter
use these keys; and seeing the porter
so unsociable that he would give them to
ne, and that to take them from him against
vill would be a hopeless endeavour, he
d awhile in doubt what he should do;
calling to mind the illusions of this
e, he determined to attack him, and ad-

vanced to strike. The serpent rose in anger, glowing with fire, and breathing out flames from his mouth. But the danger quickened Palmerin's courage, and seeing himself so engaged, he thrust his sword into one of his huge nostrils. At this he snorted out such volumes of smoke as blackened the whole air, and fled out of the gallery with terrible roarings, which seemed to shake the very earth.

The people seeing him fly over the city, and how fearful a monster he was, well judged that Palmerin had been in some great danger; and though they were in great trouble for him, it was far greater pain to Selviam, who, though he was free from bodily dangers, felt in his soul those of his master.

When Palmerin saw himself delivered from this danger, and the smoke had dispersed, he found the keys on the ground, wherewith he opened the locks, and entered into so fair a hall, and so marvellously wrought, that neither those in the island which he had won from Eutropa, nor the abode of Daliarte

in the Dark Valley, might compare with this.

Entering then into other apartments, for there was none to oppose him, he saw that they were all of the same cunning workmanship, which made him highly account the rare knowledge of the king of Thrace, by whom such a work had been devised. Now, as the serpent was the last of these vain perils, nothing more hindered him from approaching the true danger, which was the sight of Lionarda, from which no human wisdom could secure him. So proceeding from one apartment to another, at last he heard the voices of women in one of the rooms, who as soon as they perceived him, being terrified at such a novelty as the sight of an armed man, fled from the apartment, leaping from some varandas into a garden. Palmerin followed them into this garden, which seemed to him yet more worthy of admiration than all which he had seen within. He had not proceeded far, when, under the shade of some thick and green laurels, round about a fountain of rarer and more marvellous fashion than

he had ever beheld, he saw some damsels seated, so fair that they seemed worthy to be in so fair a place; and among them was Lionarda, who in form and feature was more beautiful than the rest, beyond comparison. They, when they saw him approach, rose up to receive him, knowing that by him they were released from that enchantment. Lionarda welcomed him with that graceful courtesy which nature had imparted to her. Sir Knight, said she, though certes the obligation which of so great a debt as you have laid me under, cannot be discharged with words, yet I beseech you accept now the wish I have to requite you, in satisfaction for your deeds; and hereafter, if time shall give me room to requite you better, standing with mine honour, then shall you see the desire I have to recompense you what is due.

Lady, he replied, abundant recompence for any atchievement, how great soever, is this sight, and this beauty, for one who should have a heart free enough to let him understand so great a happiness. The things of this place are all so wonderful, that the

resent put the past out of remembrance ;—
intreat you tell me, if I have any greater
anger to pass, than this which you present
efore me, for if there be I shall despair to
ccomplish it. The hope of such great
hings ought to be reserved for a greater
ieart than mine. Now, though Lionarda of
truth was so fair that fairer might not be,
/hat she felt at these words sent up so mo-
est a colour into her countenance as made
er appear yet fairer, for they seemed to
ave in them that meaning which might well
e suspected. She replied, I know not, sir
.night, what danger you sustain at this
resent; all the dangers of this place were
ıded at such time as you came into this
ırden. But then to break off their talk,
ıere came in the lords and governors of the
ity, who seeing the serpent fly over the city,
hich they knew to be the end of the en-
ıantment, came with full speed riding to
ıe castle, where coming into the garden,
ıey humbled themselves on their knees be-
ɔre the princess Lionarda, offering likewise
› kiss the hand of Palmerin as their king;
ut he, whose resolution was otherwise, would

not suffer this, but received them with equal courtesy. It was not long before a letter arrived, sent by queen Carmelia, for the princess. She was received in the city, with all the feasts and rejoicing which the people could devise in so short a time. Palmerin was amazed, as he returned, not to find that water which he had crost: for though he knew the other things to have been only visionary, this he thought had certainly been real. As soon as they reached the palace, Lionarda was received by her grand-mother Carmelia, with as much joy as a thing so long desired, deserved. Palmerin was lodged in the same apartment as before, where Selviam disarmed him, being full joyful to have his lord again, returned from so many dangers with such honour. This faithful love arose in him from that which Palmerin bore to him in like manner; for when it is otherwise the ingratitude of the lord makes the servant faithless. The damsel of Thrace brought him food, which is a necessary thing after labour; for only with this and with repose can the wearied limbs support themselves. In the city they began to prepare feasts for the en-

suing day; every one expending according as his means permitted in different devices, after the fancy of each, different people, as is natural, devising different things.

CHAPTER 98.

On the morrow after Lionarda's disenchantment, the people of all the district began to gather together to see their liege lady; and the rejoicings began in such guise, that the preparations seemed made to the end that there should be no end to them: for great things have this in them, that they seem as if they could not come to an end. Eight days, at the request of queen Carmelia, Palmerin remained in the court, appearing as goodly a man in the eyes of Lionarda, as she seemed fair a woman in the eyes of all. Now the chiefs of the kingdom seeing him not disposed to become their king, according to the will of Sardamante, took counsel together sundry times in presence of Carmelia,

and determined to make a speech to him upon the matter, entrusting it to duke Radialdo, he being a prudent and eloquent person. With this determination they went to the apartment of Palmerin, who with Selviam, was preparing for his departure the following day; and after some words of courtesy foreign to the purpose, the duke began to say, Brave prince, inasmuch as I conceive it to be known to you, what commandment our deceased king Sardamante left to be performed in the marriage of the princess Lionarda, his grandchild and our liege lady, I may be excused from reminding you thereof. Now, it is not only right and reasonable for us to follow the command of a prince so wise and prudent in all things, and so little wont to err in any, but also highly unreasonable that what you with so great labour have gained, another should quietly enjoy; and in this we should obtain a lord and king worthy of greater kingdoms. Peradventure, your exploits may have so exalted you, that you may be disposed to disdain a thing of so great value; but call to mind, that oftentimes in the beginning,

fortune doth hold forth hopes which afterwards prove vain, and when men discover this deceit, they have neither time to wait longer, nor to enjoy other good, if other she should then be disposed to grant. Much more too should you call to mind, that it is the office of this same fortune more easily to humble the great than to exalt the lowly, and that human nature in princes, as well as in other men, is exposed to all sorts of calamity. Since therefore these hazards which the world brings to all who live in it, may better be ended by the certain blessings of fortune than by her uncertain hope; look now what you have in your own hand, and the state which is ready for you, besides what by your royal descent hath been from your birth prepared as your inheritance. With this increase of dominion you will be more feared by your enemies, beloved by your friends, and endeared to your vassals, if the increase of wealth do not pervert your condition; a thing which oftentimes chanceth. Thus, finally, what you have gained faithfully in arms, you should possess quietly in peace. It would be disparagement to the

h deserts and qualities of Lionarda, if hould speak of them to you, nor will I mmit so great an error as to venture upon r praise. Only remember that men some- nes lose things which, when repentance mes, they cannot recover.

ir duke, replied Palmerin, if any thing akes me decline so good a fortune, it is a elief that the merits of the lady Lionarda ould not be bestowed on me according to heir worth. I leave her for such a one as he deserves, nor should you desire to bestow o ill one whom fortune reserves for a better ot. At this the damsel of Thrace, who was resent in his chamber, exclaimed, Sir Pal- nerin, I know right well, that love hinder- th you to enjoy what your deeds hath de- erved, and in order that you may not be erfect, maketh you thus submit your rea- on to your affection. Thus are your thoughts employed on one who peradventure thinketh not of you, yet maketh you forget one whom you might better remember. Little wonder, however, that in what so greatly concerns you, you *should be so blind*, for it is certain

that clear judgment is rarely found in a heart which is not at ease. I saw the proof of faithful love which you displayed in Constantinople, and know, therefore, that the faith and love whereby you atchieved so great an adventure, have certain roots in you, which now prevent you from your guerdon here.

The words of the damsel seemed reasonable to the duke and his company; but seeing they could obtain no other answer of Palmerin, they returned again to queen Carmelia, and as the last remedy, determined to request of him that he would chuse a husband for the princess, according as the king Sardamante had ordained: whereto Palmerin gladly agreed, saying, I account this honour, sirs, the greatest that ever fortune could send me, in suffering your princess to join in marriage according to my mind: equal to her merits I cannot provide, for that I ween would be impossible; but assure yourselves, that I shall bestow such a one upon her, as both she and you shall be contented to receive; the good be satisfied, and *the bad* have no reason to murmur.

Well pleased with this answer were the lords of Thrace, and they reported it to the queen Carmelia, who made such acceptation thereof as it deserved, consoling herself with this promise for her disappointment in that he would not himself accept the marriage of her grand-child. Lionarda was somewhat offended, and would have fallen into anger, had not the damsel of Thrace used these words unto her: Fair princess, methinks you should not think so ill of the constant faith and loyalty of Palmerin, who will keep his vow he hath made to her, which perhaps is nothing inferior to you in beauty and desert. What contentment could you expect in marriage with one, who while he were with you would be remembering another? Palmerin hath a brother as comely a person as himself, as good a knight, and of such free affection, that he not only displayed no sign of true love in the cup, but made it blacker than any other had done. He may give you this brother, and thus satisfying your deserts, you will have no cause for any offended remembrances, as among the virtuous no angry

thoughts are so great as those which arise from such things as these.

The damsel used her persuasions so well, that she made Lionarda cease to regret the departure of Palmerin, and begin to affect his brother; for they are by nature so variable, that a few words can in a single minute, efface what many days may seem to have rooted in their hearts.

That same day Palmerin took his leave of her and of queen Carmelia, who took him aside, and said, Sir Palmerin, I will not waste time in proposing to you what you have already refused to those who could better than me propound it, only I will remind you, seeing my grand-child is at your disposal, that you will increase your own honour by giving her such a lord as her birth and worthiness deserve. And if you think it good that I should send her to the court of the emperor Palmerin, where there is the flower of the chivalry of the world, this I should willingly do, knowing that by the emperor she would be honourably intreated

and placed in the society of his grand-daughter and other princesses of high descent; and that there are also all the chivalrous princes who at this day bear arms, from among whom I would fain that the successor to this kingdom should be chosen. Lady, replied Palmerin, your intention appears to me as discreet as your actions have alway been. I should esteem it the greatest honour that in all my lifetime might happen unto me: for that I persuade me, he would so well entertain her as the fair Polinarda, who is his niece, with whom she would likewise greatly delight herself. Furthermore, because all the chief knights of the world be at the court of Constantinople, I would gladly this kingdom should be ruled by such a prince as hath been trained up by that famous emperor.

The emperor will esteem this honour highly, and entertain her according as she doth deserve; therefore I wish you to send her as soon as may be, because the sooner she cometh, the better shall she be welcome.

I will send my damsel who carried the cup, said the queen, because she is known there, and also, because I think that she is well qualified for any thing; but in this also, I would know your opinion, for without it I would do nothing. My judgment is, he replied, that your highness is wise in whatever you do, for the damsel is fit for great things. So before he departed, as these things had already been consulted upon between the queen and the nobles, she called for the damsel, giving her to understand what was determined. Whereupon there were letters of credit made for her: which done, Palmerin took leave of the queen and the fair Lionarda, rejoicing to think that he was returning to that place where he so greatly wished to be; for neither her excellent beauty, nor great dominions, could for a moment shake his intentions. He rejoiced moreover to think, that here the feats of his brother Florian of the Desert would be requited, and he should find his resting-place. The next day, having heard mass, he departed, in the same arms, with the device of the tyger, from which he was thenceforth called the knight

: Tyger, being accompanied with most
e nobles forth of the city, where, after
circumstances of friendly departing,
left him. He travelled on in his jour-
yielding his body to trouble, and his
to his lady, with the fear which those
ghts occasioned, losing all fear of any
ap into which fortune might bring him;
emembering that to her disasters the
: is as much exposed as the coward, and
reat as the little.

CHAPTER 99.

Some days Florendos and Albayzar abode in the castle of Dramorante, because of the wounds which Florendos had received in his battle with Astribor. Then having restored the castle to the damsel who had been his leech, they proceeded on their way toward Spain; and because some adventures which they went through were not such that we should here delay to speak of them, the history saith, that they passed through the realm of France without approaching the court, because Florendos doubted the king, and queen Melicia his aunt, would stay him longer than he willingly would.

Therefore continuing on his way, he came

o the kingdom of Navarre, wherein on e second day they entered into a fair and ›odly valley, through the midst whereof ıere ran a river of much water, which had ıivers sorts of trees planted about it, very ›leasant to behold; the sight hereof greatly revived the pensive mind of Florendos, for it brought to remembrance the pleasantness of the waters of the Tagus, and the castle of Almourol; and this pensiveness waxed the more when, within a while, they espied by the river side a castle of marvellous fabric, whereto as they were about to advance themselves, they beheld a damsel accompanied with two esquires on foot, preparing herself towards them. Having reached them, and perceiving that only Florendos was armed, to him she addressed herself after this sort:

Sir knight, Arnalta, princess of Navarre, my lady, sends to say, that since fortune hath led you hither, you must now of three things chuse one; either you must return to the place from whence you came; or you must swear that she is the only princess of beauty in the whole world, and enter combat as long

as you live with any that dare maintain the contrary; or you must make promise, that you will never exercise arms except in an adventure which she shall enjoin. If you cannot put on the mind to satisfy my lady's will, you must endure the perils of this valley, and die in perpetual imprisonment, here provided for those who dare endue themselves with the hardiness to refuse to obey the conditions I have told you, repenting their error when repentance nothing profiteth them. Now on my own part, for you seem to me to be young and gentle, I counsel you to take your oath in maintenance of her beauty, considering you shall justify in this nothing but a truth, and that he who fights for the truth hath the victory certain.

Lady, answered Florendos, any one of the things which you command me to do, I should do with a very ill will, and that which you counsel me with the worst. The adventure to which you would have me swear I would fain understand; for it may be, that if I can serve her in it, doing at the same time what becomes myself, I may not reject it.

Sir, answered the damsel, the enterprize is so full of doubt unto the hardiest knights, that first we receive their oaths, before we discover to them the will of the princess, whereof if they should be acquainted beforehand, they would not advance themselves to undertake it. Then, said Florendos, we are come to the point. I will not promise any thing without knowing what it is; and will rather prove that wherewith you threaten me, than assent to what you require. I thought I counselled you well, said the damsel, but since you think otherwise, see what is to come: and so saying she returned to the castle of her lady, from whence, in short space after, came forth six knights gallantly mounted and armed, bearing their lances downward. Don Cavalier Luckless, said they, for that our lady hath been so courteous as to demand, and thou so impudent as thou wilt needs deny, thou shalt know that we may, can, and will compel thee. Few words and sweet! answered Florendos. Your lady may do much, but not command: you as much, but not compel; and for myself, I will neither command nor compel, but bid

you heartily welcome to what you dare do. At these words they gave the spurs to their horses, and all six fetched their career against him at once; and though he was ready, yet was the encounter so mighty that it burst his girts and brought him to the ground. He had overthrown one and left his lance in him, and sword in hand now thought to resist the others; but all five rode at him to trample him under foot. The sight of this villainy moved Albayzar to immeasurable grief, and he felt more at wanting his armour in such an extremity than if he had lost half his dominions.

Florendos thought to shun the peril, but one of the horses ran against him and threw him down; before they could turn and ride over him he had risen, and protected himself by the trunk of a tree, being so bruised by the fall that it seemed as if all his bones had been ground to pieces. One of them, as they turned again upon him, seeing him thus, said, These are not the helps that can save you; better is it to yield yourself prisoner before it costs you more. I had ra-

ther, answered Florendos, endure the death, than render myself into the hands of so vile a crew; if you have not courage enow to do battle with me one by one, but will come all at once, let it at least be on foot, and I will shew you how much the virtue of one good knight is above the brutish manners of many bad ones. Whereunto one of the knights replied, I see no reason why you should so much presume on yourself; there is no one of us but thinketh himself able enough to compel you to submit yourself, and so little account do we make of the vanquishing you, that for that reason we deal with you all together; nevertheless, seeing you fancy you would have a better chance on foot, on foot you shall see us. Whereupon they alighted and came together to assail him. But he, being full of rage and melancholy, and having now less fear of them, made at them with such fury as their baseness inspired in him, smiting a-right and a-left, and dealing such mighty and terrible strokes, that in short time they repented that they left their horses: for though these knights were both for strength and practice in arms the best of all

Navarre, they could not so defend themselves from the fury of Florendos, but that in short space they were sorely handled, and one of them lay flat upon the field with a blow upon the head, which had reached his brain. He too had received some wounds, from which much blood issued; but the wrath with which he fought did not let him feel them. Contrariwise, seeing that it behoved him to renew his endeavours, for they shewed no weakness yet, he continued his devoir so gallantly toward the other four, that he laid two of them along, and lopt off the sword arm of a third by the elbow. The one who was left, seeing his comrades in such plight, thought it better to die with them than yield himself to a man, in whom he knew not whether any mercy would be found: and in this despair his strength and courage were redoubled, so that he fought better than at first; but all was little against Florendos, who laid such load of blows upon him as soon brought him to the ground senseless. And as he was unlacing his helmet to part his head from his shoulders, the princess Arnalta came out, accompanied with her

mselves, to save the life of this knight, who
as her cousin-german, saying, Sir knight,
the end that you may not sully this great
ctory, by slaying him who hath no power
defend himself, I beseech you that you
ould give me the life of this knight. And
for the wrong you have suffered, amends
ay be made, I put myself to accomplish
ıy thing that it shall like you to ordain,
rovided always, that my honour and autho-
ty be no way impeached thereby. Madam,
ıswered Florendos, though life should not
e granted to such as employ themselves in
ıch base attempts, nevertheless I will not re-
ıse you any thing; tell me, I beseech you, in
equital, why you cause to be maintained this
ustom.

ir knight, answered the princess, lest by
onger staying, your wounds may turn to
reater danger, go with me into the castle,
here, having provided to redress your hurts,
ınd those of my knights, I will not fail to
ınswer in what you please. Upon this they
went in, and Arnalta caused one of her
damsels to see the curing of his wounds,

which in sooth were in no greater
than that he might easily travel the d
lowing. After this was done, and th
knights were dressed, and those buri
were slain, she took Florendos by the
and seeing him so young and gentle, tl
it much that he should have made his
ess so nobly known against her knight
then as she contemplated him, came
remembrance Florian of the Desert:
age was the same, and he had a som
of his air; and this remembrance ca
crimson colour to amount into her c
so that all her face delivered a lovely
They seated themselves in a windo
prospect whereof was over a fair ri
river, and she spake unto him in this m

I know well, sir knight, that the cus
my castle seemeth unto you to be or
against all reasonable regard; but
understood for what occasion I mainta
this order, you will not be any ways of
thereat. It is so, sir, that the king my
leaving me in the custody of sundry
of this realm of Navarre, he desired

his very hour of death, that they would
e I should be married to mine own pleasure
ıd contentment. Attending which time, I
ithdrew myself, for honesty, into a castle
ıme four leagues from hence, situate in a
ir place and pleasant, and apart from po-
ılar frequentation; where having sojourned
while, there chanced to arrive a young and
ɔmely knight, whose qualities seemed to
ıe of such desert that I desired to match
ith him, holding opinion, that in him I
ıould justly satisfy my father's command-
ıent, and give myself a husband worthy of
y rank and person. But he being come
om the castle of Almourol, was so ena-
ıoured that he rejected my will, and held
y words at nought. Whereupon I caused
im to be put in prison, which was easily
fected, because he was unarmed, purposing
ɔt to release him. Such however was his
rtune, that there came another knight unto
ıat place, called Florian of the Desert,
hom you do very much resemble; I know
ɔt whether you be a-kin to him. His beha-
our gained such power over me, that he
ɔt only *made me set my prisoner at liberty*,

but did with me what he would, promising to return to visit me again, and giving me some hope that he would marry me. But after that I had attended him long time, and saw him not to return according to promise, I concluded myself to remove into this valley, which is a great pass for travellers, and here by force to make those swear who professed arms, that they should not break spear, nor put armour on their backs, against any other knight than this only one who hath offered me this great despight, till he should be brought prisoner unto me. And I held this opinion, that some valiant knight happening into this place, would either discharge this vow, or by maintaining that the beauty of Miraguarda might in no respect be equalled with mine, cause Florian, who is curious in searching such haughty adventures, to come prove the contrary against him, and by one or other of these ways I might have him in my power.

Some knights, fearing the peril, have been glad to return; many have sworn themselves *to defend* my beauty, and so departed without

battle; others who would not submit to either condition, my knights have taken, and some of these were of such prowess as well nigh to put them to the worst; and thus it hath been, sir, till you have marred all.

Madam, answered Florendos, I know well the knight of whom you speak, and assure yourself that very hardly shall you bring him into this place, without he list himself; nor should you marvel although he be forgetful in satisfying his promise; for as soon as these things are over he thinks no more of them. The knights who maintain the quarrel of your beauty have reason to do wonders, and for this your person is sufficient, though you had no such custom: such as you withhold by imprisonment, I beseech you bestow them on me; they shall be able to honour you more by their knightly service, being at liberty, than you shall advantage yourself by keeping them in servitude. Sir, answered Arnalta, I cannot refuse what you desire; but what shall I do, for by your words you make me out of hope. The imprisoned knights shall be delivered you, and

I give into your hands the keys of the prison. She then took them from a string which she wore round her waist, and Florendos delivered them to Albayzar, who would himself go to release them. He found them below in a dark vault, but in no rigorous prison, for the condition of the lady of the castle was not so cruel. Then opening the locks he took them out, and as he was disarmed, some among them knew him by the light of two torches which were carried before him; for they had seen him at Constantinople, in the maintenance of the beauty of Targiana; and now seeing themselves delivered, and yet perceiving that he was without arms, they knew not what to think. But when they were come up, they perceived their liberty to be by the means of Florendos; then they threw themselves at his feet: and he, among others whom he knew, seeing Blandidon, Floraman, Roramonte, and Tenebror, thought the more of his victory. Arnalta now seeing the day gave place to the night, and that it was time to have some refection, her attendants prepared supper for Florendos and the knights that came out of prison, to whom

: gave such stately entertainment as if
: banquet had been of many days pre-
ation. This sprang from a new affection
ich she had conceived; nor was it to be
ndered at, considering her condition, and
t the prowess of Florendos, which she
l witnessed, made her forget former cares.
oreover, his courteous words had won her;
they, when they are good, win over con-
ry wills.

CHAPTER 100.

That night Florendos slept in the castle of Arnalta unwillingly, for he perceived inclinations in her which were hateful to his condition; and no sooner was it day, but he arose and put on his armour, which was much defaced, by reason of his sore fight; and after taking his farewell, as also of Blandidon, Tenebror, and Roramonte, in no case would he leave the company of Floraman, because since the time that they had met in the woods, they twain had been such friends that their affection to each other endured as long as they lived; a thing much to be esteemed, because we every day see how changeable such things be. Arnalta remained so greatly passionate for his de-

parture, that she now began to devise means of vengeance upon Florendos, forgetting Florian, even as if she had never seen him; in this not differing from the true nature of all womankind, which is for any present passion, how light soever, to put clean out of remembrance the past, even though such as ought not to be forgotten; and being in this mood when she took farewell of the restored prisoners, she could not use such gracious behaviour as she had done the day before. Florendos rid certain days in the company of Albayzar and Floraman, who had concluded to travel to the castle of Almourol to see what entertainment Miraguarda would make to Florendos, and whether she could now find, contrary to her former custom, his noble employed service agreeable to her curious nature. These three nights following their way, they perceived after they were entered far within the realm of Spain, at the foot of a mountain, a knight of great stature, standing between two great and wide branching ash trees: he was armed in green armour, and bare in his shield a white bull, in a field of sable; he was mounted on a *goodly* bay horse, and sat so

well, and was of such goodly semblance himself, that he seemed well to become arms. Before they came up to him, an esquire stept to them, who delivered his mind after this order:

Sirs, the keeper of these ash trees giveth you to understand that he hath maintained this passage a long time against all knights: not that he hath desire to offer any knight discourtesy, but only to satisfy the will of a lady whom he serves. Therefore, if it may stand with your liking, to grant such things as he will demand, the passage shall be free for you; but if you enterprise to do the contrary, he will put in trial to make you confess perforce, that which you cannot reasonably deny or refuse to grant.

Declare unto us, quoth Florendos, first the will of thy master, and then we will make thee answer; for hardly can we determine of the matter whereof we are ignorant.

You have to confess, answered the esquire, that Arnalta, the princess of Navarre, is the fairest creature under heaven, and most

worthy of knightly service. It seems to me, said Albayzar, that her knights have found one to perform this condition, rather than do battle with them. A bad business he will have of it if he thinks to follow it long. You may tell your master, said Florendos to the squire, what you have heard this knight say. While the esquire was returning, Floraman, who had laced on his helmet, and righted himself in the saddle, desired Florendos that he would grant him the combat, and gave the spurs to his horse. The attaint was well delivered on either side, and as both were especial knights, they were both dismounted: they recovered themselves promptly, and set their hands to their swords, wherewith they began to strike one another fiercely, using such knightly dexterity as manifested their practice in arms. This was a notable battle, and became so fearful a one, that Florendos and Albayzar delighted to behold it.

And for that Floraman was reputed for one of the good knights of the world, they seeing how little he had the vantage of his opponent, held the *other in more* account, and mar-

velled why so brave a man should have chosen to keep that pass, rather than do battle with Arnalta's knights. The combat now became more furious, and Floraman, remembering that Florendos and Albayzar, who were very princes of valour, beheld him, fought with such ardour, that his whole strength and courage were displayed to their full extent: and the other also, whom his love for Arnalta bound not to spare himself, did wonders as well.

These two knights continued combat so long, that they were constrained to take breath; upon which the strange knight, rejoicing thereat, began to use this language towards Floraman. I know not, sir knight, why we should kill one another without cause. You, in confessing that my lady Arnalta is the fairest woman in the world, and the most worthy to be served, would confess the truth; now this being clear, what reason can bind you to maintain a falsehood, since certain it is, that he who combats upon a false quarrel, hath the victory doubtful. A greater falsehood would it be, replied Floraman, to admit

what thou sayest to be truth; Arnalta may be fair, and worthy to be served; nevertheless, the world enjoyeth some such, to whom she may in no wise be equalled. I have in time past loved a lady myself, in respect of whom I will rather die, than accord to the error which thou wouldst have me confess.

Floraman had no sooner concluded his speech, but they returned afresh to the combat, charging one another more furiously than they had done before, so that it could not be judged whether the one had any advantage of the other, they maintained the fight so bravely. But in the end, the knight that kept the passage began by a little and a little to feel that feebleness somewhat assailed him, and that stroke by stroke his sword turned in his hand, and his armour was broken in many places. The armour of Floraman was in no better case than his enemy's, but he followed his strokes more wisely, and was in better wind; and when they drew back a second time, seeing the weakness of his opponent, and being of a noble nature, he wished to see if he could

make him desist from the battle without loss of life; whereupon he spake to him in this manner:

Sir knight, you see very well that the truth of your enterprize is not so clear as you judged it; confess therefore that there are other ladies in the world whose beauty Arnalta may no way parallel, even though she be fair as you say she is. I know well, sir, said the knight of the passage, that the weakness whereinto you see me brought, induceth you to prove me with such persuasions; certes, what I maintain is the truth, but I am of so little worth, and you of so much, that you, in maintaining falsehood, succeed against me. I have the worst of the battle, and now know that its end and mine must be the same; but I shall finish what I have begun, not desiring to live except it be to defend this truth, nor to die in any other cause. At the same instant that he finished these words, he charged Floraman afresh, who caught him in his arms, and with little effort overthrew him. Florendos and Albayzar then came to him, being grieved to see him in

this plight, for they judged that he must be dead; and taking off his helmet, the air brought him to himself, and they perceived that it was Albanis of Frisa, the prince of Denmark; at which Floraman was little content, attributing it to his ill fortune, for he was his great friend.

They bore him to the house of an old knight, whose abode was in the mountain; and as they went they demanded of him upon what occasion he undertook so bad an enterprize. Sirs, answered Albanis, I came one day into the valley where the princess Arnalta hath an abode, the pleasantest in the world; and it so chanced that at the time when I happened there, she was enjoying herself upon the banks of the river, it being evening. Seeing her so beautiful, together with other graces which I found in her, I remained her vowed servant in good will; and because no knight who entered that valley might pass through it without chusing to perform one of three things, I undertook to approve against all wandering knights, that she was the fairest person in the world, that being one of the

three; and this I did, not in any fear of her knights, but because the affection which I had conceived made her verily appear so unto me.

Now I am fallen into the hands of sir Floraman, and what I regret is not the loss of victory, for being overcome by him I account that no loss; but that which maketh me grieve is, that I lose the hope that till this hour I entertained. They who make profession of arms, sir Albanis, said Florendos, ought not to be abashed when any change befalls them. Arnalta meriteth much, yet not so much as that she should obscure the merits of others who are in nothing her inferiors; you should rejoice that this disaster hath befallen you before your friends; for had it been otherwise you would have had more cause for sorrow.

With this they arrived at the house of the knight, who received them gladly, for that he was accustomed to lodge all wandering knights; and such diligent attendance was used, that the wounds of Albanis were meetly healed, and certain days he was accompanied

ıe prince Florendos and his companions,
lay which was sorely irksome to Floren-
for the desire he had to reach the castle
lmourol. Yet he dissembled this, and
:d his own inclinations, to gratify his
ds. This is one of the advantages of the
, that they are thanked even for what
do unwillingly.

CHAPTER 101.

This history maketh mention, how the emperor was one day in the empress's chamber, accompanied with the worthiest lords of his empire, when the damsel of Thrace entered the door, who was well known by all since she had been there with the adventure of the cup. She looked round the house, and because she saw not the knights which were accustomed to be there, it seemed to her as if that could not be the court of the emperor Palmerin. Great was the joy at her coming, and great the expectation. The emperor received her with a gracious welcome, desirous to learn what had happened to Palmerin in the adventure of Lionarda. Whoso had then turned his eyes upon the fair

rda, might well have seen her fears in
ıanges of her countenance: for it is
for these who live in fear easily to
art.

.nd mighty prince, said the damsel,
that Palmerin hath finished the en-
ıent of my lady the princess Lionarda,
; through all the perils of the adven-
safety, and with the greatest honour
ı be said. The whole discourse whereof
en delivered in circumstance. But
ihe came to report the manner of his
; the lake, wherewith the isle was
ssed round about, the danger of the
ınd the fashion how he was drawn up,
press and her ladies were so overcome
ear, that the colour in their cheeks
to alter.

ɜ heard reported, said the emperor,
ıtrange adventures, and have atchieved
nyself in my time, but I never either
heard of any so perilous as this. Well
: appear that the cunning and discre-
king Sardamante were different from

those of other men, and the prowess of Palmerin above all other; for I know not who else that had seen himself in such dismay, would have had courage or prudence to extricate himself. The damsel went on to relate all the rest as it happened, saying, that which above all appeared to us most worthy of wonder, was, to see him free from the last; that is to say, from the beauty of Lionarda, which is in truth so much to be lauded, that it seemeth as if nature here putting forth all her skill, had made her to be the very proof and sample of perfection. But he is altogether blinded, and his heart is affectionately placed elsewhere; for love hath had power over him to make him reject both the beauty and the inheritance of Lionarda, two things which are so rarely united in the same person; rejecting marriage with her, which was offered him by her people; so that it was finally determined she should wed with whom he thought good, according to the testament of king Sardamante, her grandfather. And therefore, queen Carmelia, her grandmother, hath chosen that the princess should sojourn awhile in your court, that the

husband whom Palmerin shall appoint for her may be one of the knights of this house, and she, in the mean time, remain in the company of the princess Polinarda, as also of other noble ladies, wherewith your renowned court is plentifully enriched; whose gracious conversation may not only entertain the heart of Lionarda with the precious dignity of unspotted virtue, but also, by imitating their honourable examples, she may retain their friendship and manners also, a better patrimony than worldly possessions. Concerning this she asked advice of Palmerin, who not only liked well of the intent, but charged me in his name to request this favour of you. And queen Carmelia biddeth me say to you, that you should remember how you have never yet denied to any one, any request which seemed just, as this is, and moreover, one which being granted, will so greatly bind both her and the whole kingdom of Thrace to your service. To this effect she commanded me to present your majesty with this her letter of credit.

The emperor took the letter, which when

he had perused, he thus framed his answer: Discreet damsel, I give you thanks for the good news you have brought me of my grandson Palmerin, and God grant my power may stretch so far as to requite you according as you have worthily merited.

And for the lady, the love of whom caused him to reject the princess Lionarda, I know not by what means she can requite him, though the hearts of the enamoured are satisfied with little. And where you desire I would yield my consent, that the princess might come to remain in my court, assure yourself, that I think myself more highly honoured by such a request than ever yet I have been; and the longer her coming is delayed, the more I shall think myself a loser. And the better to declare how grateful I accept her coming hither, I give to you the county of Selim, to be your portion, which by reason of the death of count Arlao, remaineth vacant, he not having left any heirs to possess the same. The damsel threw herself at the emperor's feet, and the emperor raised her up, giving her his hand, which he was

not accustomed to do to any stranger, except when he conferred some signal favour.

The damsel then behaved herself in the same manner of duty to the empress, as she would have done toward Primaleon and Gridonia, but they by their courtesy made stay of her humble offer; whereupon she turned to the emperor, and delivered her mind in these words: The bounty which your majesty hath vouchsafed me, I accept when I shall come here with my lady Lionarda, to possess together with the husband whom it shall please you to appoint for your service; and as a still greater bounty do I receive the answer to my embassy, being such as I wished. And now I am eager to return; see therefore what your majesty will command, for I cannot prevail upon myself to tarry a single day.

Damsel, answered the emperor, it should like me well, if you made some abode here to rest yourself; but since you like better to depart, be it as you will. Then she took her leave of the emperor, and all his company, and came to the chamber of Polinarda, who

had secretly withdrawn herself with Dramaciana to enjoy those joyful tidings: and when the damsel, coming to take leave of her also, saw her more nearly than she had done before, she who was discreet in all things presently began to conjecture, that it was the beauty of this princess which had caused Palmerin to refuse the government of Thrace in which she was fully confirmed by seeing how particularly she enquired about all things concerning him. Polinarda honoured the damsel with very princely courtesy, and gave her jewels and things of her own person of great value; and she desired her, that she would be the messenger of her unfeigned good will to the princess Lionarda, whom she besought to come unto the court the sooner for her sake. The damsel made promise to perform every thing to the uttermost; so departing from the princess, she went from the palace to her lodging, where she found other honourable presents, which the empress and Gridonia had sent unto her with the which she departed, more rich and more contented than she came.

Leave we the damsel on her journey, and return to the knight of the Tyger, who, after he departed from the kingdom of Thrace, took the way to Constantinople, that being the only place where his passionate thoughts could find their certain repose. Thus travelling on, one day about the hour of sunset he arrived in a wilderness, far from any houses or resort of people, where riding along, he heard the trampling of a great many horses; and casting his eye that way where he heard the noise, he espied ten or twelve armed knights galloping overthwart the forest, as men who were hastening upon some business of great import. Whereupon he laced on his helmet, meaning to follow them. While he was thus employed he saw another knight coming more leisurely along the same track, by reason his horse had received an attaint in one of his legs. To him Palmerin drew nigh and said, Can you tell me, sir, who yonder knights are, or for what reason they travel so fast? You have little need to know, replied the other, but as your acquaintance with the cause can neither hurt them with your malice, nor pleasure

them with your aid, I am content to resolve you in what you request.

You shall understand, sir, that three leagues off there is the castle of a lady, who hath a daughter fair and with a fair patrimony; with whom a knight named Felistor, is very desirous to marry, the chief of those whom you see yonder; but by reason of old feuds between her father and his, her lady mother will not suffer her to be so bestowed, and hath now given her to be espoused to another principal knight of this country, named Radiamar. Felistor, knowing that to-morrow they mean to remove her to another castle, where the marriage is to take place, is going this night to lay an ambushment in a little wood, by which they must of necessity pass, that he may take her by force and marry her himself, and slay those who shall seek to defend her; and he maketh this speed that he may arrive in time to ambush himself, without being perceived, the place being far distant. My horse stumbled over the root of a tree, and can now scarcely stand upon the right fore-leg, and I am

ready to die with vexation that I shall not be able to arrive in time. If therefore there be so much courtesy in you, lend me your horse, for that whereon your squire rideth doth not seem so good. I will receive it as a great favour, and may perhaps hereafter requite it on a better occasion.

Certes, answered Palmerin, upon men whose intention is so bad, nothing could be well bestowed; and therefore as I found you, I leave you, being so desirous to be with your companions, that I cannot at this time stay to make you the answer which your folly deserves; and with that he posted to overtake Felistor. Ah! quoth the strange knight, thou makest overmuch haste to thine own misfortune; the simplest of them before thee is sufficient for a hundred such as thee, and thou art for fighting with all of them! When I come up I shall find you and your conceit both brought to an end, and your horse waiting for me, who shall have no thanks to give thee for it. He of the Tyger had attained such length of ground, that he heard him not, neither if he had would

he have turned; for noble hearts are not moved by trifles, and the veryest trifles rouse an arrogant one to anger.

On he went pursuing their track till night closed in, and it became so dark that he could not see how to follow them any further by the tread of their horses; still, however, so great was his desire to come up with them that he rode on, guessing his course; till towards morning, both their horses being so weary that they could scarcely move, they alighted and took off their bridles to let them rest while the day broke; which it had scarcely done when he mounted and proceeded on his pursuit, being grievously moved that he could discover no trace of them;—for it is the nature of a great mind not to have patience in that which it greatly desires.

CHAPTER 102.

The knight of the Tyger so long pursued the search in vain, that he had almost spent one half of the day. In the mean while, Felistor had knowledge given him by his spies, that the lady and her daughter were set forth on their way, with only four knights in company; so sallying out upon them, as they were taken by surprise he easily overcame them, took the ladies, and made them turn back by that way from whence they came. The knight of the Tyger, being now almost in despair, for by this time the noon was past, saw him with the lame horse crossing the forest in a different direction, who had gored the belly of his beast with incessantly spurring him. He seeing the knight of the Tyger, and recognising him, stopt till he

came up. Sir knight, said he, I perceive that either you have not wished to encounter my companions, or else you mean to lend me your horse, which I will not now receive, because I will not be so much beholden to you. I know not, answered the knight of the Tyger, whether you would thank me for him or not, but if you had a better I would borrow him of you whether you would or no, because I would follow the intent I have enterprized, and give aid to those whose necessity requires it. I cannot chuse but laugh, said the strange knight, in that you having spent the whole night in sleeping, would now persuade me that you lost your way. Yonder they are, just topping the hill; and they have got the damsel—for I see petticoats. Now, sir, shall you have opportunity enough to fulfil your wish if your stomach serve you.

He of the Tyger cast his eyes that way, and as they were yet at some distance had time to lace on his helmet, and to have his girth fastened, and to seat himself well in the saddle as was needful, when he had to deal with a

many. They who came with the damsel were not more than six, for the rest were gone forward to secure her mother's castle. He chose out an open spot for the meeting, and took his post there.

Felistor came on with his helmet in his hand, talking to the damsel, who made him no answer, but lamented bitterly. Her mother came upon a palfrey with her face uncovered, so disconsolate and sad, that she seemed to give no heed to any thing. He of the Tyger waited till they were passing him, and then took the bridle of the damsel's palfrey and stopt it, saying, Lady, if to be delivered from the hands of these who are leading you away will dry your tears, begin now to be contented; small force will serve to chastise the wicked, for they carry with them the cause of their own overthrow.

Felistor hearing this, became so melancholick that he had no power to make any answer; and without taking either helmet or shield from his squire who carried them, he drew out his sword to kill him; but he of the Tyger

came down on him with one of his wonte blows, which finding the head unarmed, en tered into the brain, and laid him dead; the turning to the others, who now beset him o all sides, he began to do wonders. Th damsel seeing him in this press, and doubt ing that he would be able to atchieve s great an adventure, and moreover afrai lest they should kill her, gave her palfre the bridle, and struck into the thickest o the forest. The knight of the Tyger per ceiving this, and fearing that some misha might befall her if he did not come up witl her in time, quickened his strokes in sucl sort, that when he had slain three of them the rest fled, and he with the lame horse came and humbly yielded himself, desirin that he would not remember what word had passed from him.

The lady seeing her enemies so happily van quished, received in her heart unspeakabl joy; but when she looked about, and could no see her daughter, her joy was turned int sorrow; she fell down before the knight o the Tyger, giving him thanks for his nobl succour, and beseeching him, since he ha

with such peril delivered her from her enemies, he would now lend her his assistance till she had found her daughter, for without her this victory would be a thing of small contentment to her.

Madam, quoth the knight of the Tyger, thank the deeds of your enemies for this victory against them; such ill ones do always receive their righteous recompence, for divine justice faileth in nothing of perfection. Your daughter, I saw strike into yonder part of the wood, and she cannot be far off; let us therefore leave the dead and go in search of her, and wheresoever else you please; for as long as you are in fear I will not leave you, nor till you think yourself secure: whereto the lady replied, Ah, sir! I see well, that virtue and courage are united in you! I would that my poor power were of sufficiency to requite your bounty: nevertheless, God will repay your good deserts.

Then they rode on which way they judged the damsel had taken. They journeyed all the rest of the day, and most part of the night, yet were they never able to find any

traces of her; and it is not to be marvelled why, for the fear she had was so great. They having travelled thus long searching the wood, and over hill and dale, were at last constrained to alight and ease their horses, which Selviam did presently unbridle, that they might refresh themselves in the pasture; then gave he to his lord and the sorrowful lady such provision for their sustenance as he carried with him. And at such time as the morning began to open, they presently remounted on horseback, and rode about every part of the forest which they thought they had not yet searched, yet not finding her they so gladly looked for; which made the lady conceive so great grief, as the knight of the Tyger by no persuasion could appease: at last, hoping that the palfrey might have taken the road home, for they had lost all other hope, they rode to her castle, where they arrived about the hour of vespers; but there, instead of finding her daughter, she found Felistor's four knights in possession of the castle, who refused to open to them. At this the dame was full sorrowful, seeing her daughter lost, and her castle in possession of her enemies; and what with this trouble,

and weariness of long travel, she let herself fall from her palfrey, in such wretched plight, that none could have seen her without partaking of her grief.

The knight of the Tyger, seeing her in so great affliction, became full of anger and melancholy that he could not enter the castle; and approaching to the foot thereof, began to revile the knights in language not according with his wonted condition: for overcharged hearts are wont to relieve themselves with bitter words when they are said to those who deserve them. Now though the knights of Felistor had been charged by no means to go out from the castle without his orders, neither to open to any except himself, or some certain messenger from him; they held it for so great an injury, that one only knight should dare so to abuse them, that they resolved to go out, holding their victory and vengeance to be certain, and having chastised him, to return to their ward. With this determination, being armed and having mounted on horseback, they ordered the bridge to be lowered over the moat, that they might issue out.

But before the bridge was fairly down, he of the Tyger, not chusing to wait for them without, sprung upon it, and found them all four in the castle-yard, ready to come forth. One of them seeing this great boldness, exclaimed, Certes, great is your folly to come and seek the punishment which it deserves. And because there was not room in the castle-yard for them to fight on horseback, they alighted. He of the Tyger was too full of wrath to waste any time in words, and before they were well clear of their horses, he laid at them with such force and fury, as in short time to make them repent that they had opened the gate. There was little to do in this battle, and for that reason it is not written of more largely; it is enough to say, that he defeated them all four with the death of two, giving life to all the rest of their people, who yielded themselves.

The lady then entered into her castle, greatly abashed at the prowess of the knight, and sorrowful beside, because she knew not how to recompence so great services. And that her joy might be complete, presently she

beheld her daughter coming, conducted by five knights, who were bringing her from the castle of an aunt, some four leagues distant, whither she had betaken herself in her flight. When she entered and saw the yard strewn with broken arms and blood, she began to fear again, thinking that even there she was not secure. But from this fear her mother speedily relieved her, embracing her and weeping over her, and bidding her give thanks to him who had so signally redressed their cause. Then went they together to the knight of the Tyger, who cutting short their words, that he might not hear his own praises, with others of fitting courtesy, they went to rest. There he abode three days, and then leaving the lady and her daughter in security, and as much bound to him as his services merited, he departed thence, taking his journey toward the place where his heart desired to be, and offering his arms and person to any peril which presented itself; not giving room to idleness, which giveth room to vice, but believing that whoso is assailed by it will at length be *overcome*.

CHAPTER 103.

Because it is a long time since the history hath made mention of Florian of the Desert, it will now leave Palmerin on his way to Constantinople, and return to him, who being departed from the court of the emperor Vernao after his coronation, armed in green armour, and bearing in his shield a savage man leading two lions in a leash, even according as he did before he was known to be the son of Don Duardos. He rode without a companion, still calling himself the knight of the Savage Man, whose fame struck fear into all, when they remembered the feats which he had performed.

So it befell, that having roamed through

many places, every where leaving immortal fame behind him, fortune conducted him into the realm of Ireland, even to the place where the castles were of the three sisters, daughters of the marquis Beltamor, and that which had been the giant Calfurnio's, whom he slew at such time as he had taken these damsels prisoners. But as time in short space maketh great changes, these castles were now inhabited by new masters: wherefore, inquiring concerning this of a hermit with whom he took up his lodging that night, he learnt that Calfurnio had at the time of his death two brothers who had never then borne arms, the one called Bracolan, the other Baleato, who lived in the Profound Isle, with their mother Colambar. They, when they were given to understand the death of the giants Calfurnio and Camboldam of Murcella, their brethren, got themselves, contrary to the will of their mother, armed knights, vowing to take vengeance or to die in pursuit of it. And in as much as they felt themselves equal to great things, this doubled their desire to put their purpose in effect: so after some days and years had passed

away, their mother still detaining them, for fear of the disasters which might chance; at last they embarked in a galley with certain knights of their household, and took the way to Ireland, where, before any danger was apprehended, they took the castles of the three sisters, as also that which belonged to their brother, putting all to the sword that they found within; for the duke of Ortam and the other lords thereof, thinking them secure, had placed in them but slender guard. It was only ten days since they had completed the conquest; and as at that time there were few knights in the court of England, none as yet had come against them; but it seems, said the hermit, that they are fortifying themselves like persons who expect to be attacked. Can you tell me, said he of the Savage, if they ever come out into the forest? That question quoth the hermit, I would fain not have heard from you, for it seems to spring from a desire to do battle with them, and which I would be sorry you should do, in that the meanest of them is of ability to resist three of the best knights in this realm. Therefore I desire you, if your affection be bent that way

that at my request you would bridle it within limits of discretion, and remember, that it is dishonour to a noble mind to adventure life more wilfully than wisely, under the title of seeking renown. I must judge him altogether void of knightly regard, which sees the danger to be beyond his compass, and yet will desperately throw himself into the hazard: trust me, if such a one be thus by his own folly brought to death, he dies out of the divine mercy, and his deeds are condemned for ever. Good sir, let no such mind remain in you, but witness your valour in occasions which present more hope of victory, and are of better equality with your force; for in doing otherwise, you shall give cause to think, that either brutal hardihood or desperate hope have conducted you hither, rather than any confidence of victory. The giants sally out every day, either going his own way, and their knights another, killing some, robbing others, and exercising their accursed intents with such force and cruelty, that if God doth not speedily send them the punishment which they deserve, this land will be utterly destroyed. They think themselves secure

because the sons of Don Duardos are away; and on the other hand, they wish no others, having determined either to die revenge the death of their brethren up them.

According to the deeds which you tell of these men, replied he of the Savage, I should not, methinks, marvel that any s should adventure his life to save so ma innocents from their cruelty; the order knighthood is given us to this end, a must we wait for such adventures as show t accomplishment to be easy, for then it wo not be worthy either of thanks or of prai Therefore, God willing, to-morrow, if fortu will give me the opportunity, I shall try it doing what I can, and she what she please

Much was the hermit troubled at this, a with many persuasions he strove to remo him from his determination; but finding th to be in vain, he confessed him, and com mended him to God. And when he unde stood who he was, he had yet more pity up his youth and courage, fearing that it ma

him venture more than was needful; and he counselled him with good and holy speeches, such as his judgment presented to him at that time; and so they past a part of the night, and another part they slept. But as that sleep was no repose, as soon as it was day the hermit, after he had told his beads, said mass, at which the knight was present, having all his armour on, save the helmet. When it was ended, and the father was disrobing himself, they heard the tramp of horses on the side towards the mountain. He of the Savage went to the door, and there almost ran against a damsel, who threw herself from off her palfrey, like one dead. Anon up came Bracolan, one of the giants, who was in fair white armour, and well mounted on a lusty courser.

He, when he saw the night of the Savage had taken the damsel by the hand, and was asking her what she fled from, alighted from his horse, saying, I do not think you have taken a safe port. And you, Don Cavalier, give her to me, unless you would feel my strength. Methinks, replied the knight, no

one need stand in fear of one who employs it so ill; and then letting go the damsel, who fled into the hermit's cell, he had leisure to lace his helmet on, for Bracolan was doing the same. Then making against each other, the first stroke which he of the Savage received was dealt with such force, that it cut away good part of his shield; and the sword was of such fine temper, that holding on through to the armour, it demolished a part of the lappet of his mail; whereat the knight was nothing pleased, thinking that if he received many such, his life would be in danger. The hermit, terrified at the might and fierceness of Bracolan, was upon his knees praying to God to help his own. He of the Savage, placing his last hope in the divine mercy, availed himself of his nimbleness, thinking that of more avail than his strength; for nothing could withstand the devilishness of his enemy's blows. This slight and wariness stood him in good stead, and as Bracolan began to wax weary, he availed himself well of the advantage, and laid his blows with such good aim and good will, that the giant

having lost much blood, was fain to draw back for breath. Then the giant, seeing his blood trickle down his armour, while his enemy was in far better plight, being overcome with rage and melancholy, began to say, What—is it possible that one only knight can stand so long against me, and that my might and main are not sufficient to confound such a feeble resistance? Certes, the less is now my hope of vanquishing those who slew my brethren Calfurnio and Camboldam; and would to the gods, that he who is here before me were one of them, that if I must needs ends my life, it might be at one of their hands by whom my brethren ended theirs.

Thus concluding, he began to charge the knight of the Savage Man with rough and forcible strokes, who, besides that he stood in fear of those terrible blows, had another cause of fear, which was, that if he were hardly handled in this battle, he knew not where he should find remedy, and that he must needs fall into the hands of the other giant and his knights. This made him so

watchful and alert, that the greater number of his enemy's blows were delivered in vain, while he on the contrary delivered his so well, that at length the great Bracolan, losing all strength, fell at the feet of his conqueror. He of the Savage, remembering that to give life to the wicked is for the hurt of the good, cut off his head without delay, and gave thanks to God for so signal a victory.

The hermit came out to him, blessing him, and amazed to behold that monstrous body dead; and the damsel, whose heart was now not such as it had been when she entered, and who was a fair woman, threw herself at his feet, saying, I know not how I can pay you for so great a service, but by lauding your knightly deeds in the court of the emperor Vernao, whither at this present time I direct my course: in truth they are such, that it would be an error to be silent any where concerning them. I beseech you therefore to tell me your name, which I the more earnestly desire for two causes, the one, that I may praise your *noble* valour, the other that I may know

to whom I owe the salvation of my honour.

Fair damsel, quoth he of the Savage, if you desire to know my name that I may do you service to the uttermost of my power, I will declare it unto you; but for any other cause, my deeds are of so small estimation, that I do not wish it should be known. This I can tell you, that the sight of you can oblige men to do much, and me more than all, since in so short a time I find that I have yielded up my inclinations to you with such ardent love, that I beseech you let your pity be as ready to relieve me, as your beauty was to wound me.

Jesu, deliver thee, my son! cried the hermit. This is a worse danger than the one which thou hast just escaped; for if that was hurtful to the body, it might have profited the soul; but this leads to perdition. Remember that these are diabolical temptations, which the Devil lays for thee, and into which the weakness of the flesh daily falls. Father, replied he of the Savage, they are the works of hu-

man nature, and cannot be avoided; and if you, father, were well to note the merits of this lady, that beauty in her countenance, that life in her eyes, and that grace in her whole form, you would presently perceive that he who did not yield himself to them altogether, must either be good for nothing, or have his spirit so dead that he can feel nothing. Therefore, lady, since you see how it is with me, treat me as you please; for I desire nothing more than to gain your will, in order to do it in all things. Such is the power of the world, quoth the hermit, that its pleasures make the preciousness of the soul forgotten! Turn thyself to God, my son, for the world favours thee, because thy deeds are worldly. Father, replied he of the Savage, satisfy me that you are free from these human accidents in your cell, and that the flesh never rebels under that habit of yours, and then I shall think more of these dangers. But I fear me we are all able to reprove the vices of others, but when we should withdraw ourselves from them, which with little effort might be done, our inclinations will not consent, and we lay the blame upon the weak-

ness of the flesh. My mind is, that he who fairly gives himself up to it, neither offends any body nor hurts himself; and I am such a one. Change your discourse, father, for to waste words is a vice also. Certes, replied the hermit, I will shut myself up in my cell; follow you the world, it will give you that reward at last which none who have followed it have ever failed, sooner or later, to find. And so he went into his cell, and fastened the doors after him, just as if the giant Bracolan had been alive again, and was following him.

Lady, then said the knight to the damsel, what will you do with me, or what shall I do for you, to shew you that I am at your service? Sir, she replied, since you have delivered me from so great a disaster, do not lead me into another, for then, instead of remaining beholden unto you, I should have whereof to complain. This country is not safe; I should be glad if you would accompany me a day or two's journey, and then do what you please, as I have no farther favour to request. In this, replied he, I receive a

very great one, and for the rest, I would fain have your good will certain, for without it I have neither health nor life secure. Herewith he presently took his horse, causing his squire to mount the damsel, who by the way recounted to him, how by a tempest she was cast on the coast of Ireland, coming from Denmark, and carrying letters from the queen to the empress Basilia. And when I perceived, quoth she, that I was in this country, where my cousins, the daughters of the marquis Beltamor remained, I intended to bestow a little labour in seeing them, thinking to find them in these castles; but on the way Bracolan assaulted me, who not contented with murthering my two squires that bare me company, pursued me to have his villainous will. Certes, lady, said he, I would you would relieve me from the force which you do my affection, for from all such I will deliver you.

By this time they came to the ford of a brook, whose clear and gentle waters flowed under the shade of some spreading trees; and here, because it was full hot, they resolved to take

he *sesta*, sending the squire to see if he ould find any place where to procure ood. The knight took off his helmet, and being young as he was, and his face now red with travel, he seemed a goodly person to the damsel, who though she said nothing, let him perceive it; and settled her head-dress, and adjusted her garments, and now became angry and now pleased, and now sorrowful, and then pleased again. He of the Savage understood all this, and easily won her to his wish before the return of the squire.

CHAPTER 104.

The knight of the Savage Man spent all that day in company with the damsel under the trees by the brook-side; and when night came on, as they saw no place where they could be harboured, they thought it best to continue where they were. The squire made a heap of grass on which they laid themselves down, and he of the Savage fell fast asleep, like one who had nothing to keep him waking. The damsel had more reason to think, and less to be satisfied; and this, with the carelessness of the knight, made her remain awake, displeased with herself, repenting her folly, and striving to forget what she could not help remembering. Great part of the night was past, when two squires

came by about a stone's throw from her, and a knight behind them in white armour, so white and shining that it was seen through the darkness. He was of such huge stature, as he seemed to exceed the giant Bracolan; and as he walked, many times he would give such groans as if his soul were issuing with them. Now, as it was yet some time till day, he called to his squires to stop, saying, that he would repose himself under the trees.

Fear now made the damsel forget all other troubles, and she pulled the knight of the Savage Man by the arm, and awoke him, saying, that there was another Bracolan at hand. Startled at this, he rose, and going towards him as softly as he could, saw the squires securing the horses, and their master lying on his face, and lamenting aloud.

I see, said he, it is great folly for me to repose any credit in the gods, who either want power, or else are wilfully bent to overthrow him that hath most trusted them; and good cause have I to think so, my bre-

thren, Calfurnio and Camboldam, being vanquished by one only knight, and now Bracolan also, who to revenge them left his own country, and offered up so many great and costly sacrifices, believing that by their merits he should attain the certain guerdon of victory. And now they make so small estimation of me in their favour, as they will not suffer me to meet with him who slew Bracolan, that I might either bear my brethren company, or take such cruel revenge as might somewhat lighten my great grief: how then can I chuse but blaspheme your names, and deny to give you the honour I have done? I will honour your altars with no more testimonies of my affection, but that trust I had in you I will repose in myself; so for ever henceforth I despise you.

By these words he of the Savage knew that this was Baleato, who having intelligence of his brother's death, sought to find him that had done the deed; and well pleased he was, in that he found him without any of his knights to aid him; so returning to where the damsel was, he began to arm

himself; but before he could finish, he was perceived; for the horse of the giant, as he was grazing, encountered his, and then began a fierce battle between them, so that each going to part them, of necessity they met. Baleato, whose custom it then was to grant life to nobody, seeing an armed man in the valley, cried out in a terrible voice, What is he that dares imagine himself so hardy, as to trouble me in my silent purposes? Thou art but little beholden to fortune for conducting thee hither, in the time of my fury. And for this wretched damsel, I will offer her as a sacrifice with all kinds of torments: and so will I deal with all damsels that I can meet, for that Bracolan, the best knight in the world, was slain in following one.

Baleato, replied he of the Savage Man, keep thy words for one who is afraid of thy deeds; neither the one nor the other can dismay me; the damsel I will defend, and I will humble thy pride for ever. And in order that thou mayest fight with me with the better will, *know that* I am he who slew Cal-

furnio in time past, and I am he who slew Bracolan yesterday, and I am he who is now to slay thee; for neither thy strength nor thy courage shall save thee, nor still less the power of thy gods. Take thy helmet, for I want no advantage of thee.

Such was the passion of the giant at hearing these words, that it took away from him all power of speech, and all his limbs shook with anger. So taking his helmet, he made at the knight without delay, crying out, Thou destroyer of my blood, here thou hast before thee thy greatest enemy in the world: therefore shew the uttermost of thy manhood, for I carry that hope with me, to bathe these hands of mine in thy blood, and to rent thy cursed heart in pieces, and throw it for food to the fowls of the air.

Then coming down with a blow, the knight deliverly avoided it, and dealt him one in return upon the top of his shield, which was bound round with rims of iron so strong, that the blow was of no avail. The giant, who was too wrathful to fight leisurely, laid

on such mortal strokes, that wherever they had lit they would have done no little hurt; but he of the Savage still shifted so warily, that he made him lose them all. The shield which he bore was Bracolan's, for his own had been destroyed in that battle; and it was so heavy that he could not well lift it with one hand to protect himself: this made him fear the combat more, and use this slight, thinking to weary out the giant. But Baleato, who perceived this, used another practice; for aiming a blow at one part, he quickly turned it to another, and in this manner gave him two or three wounds of great hurt, especially one in the right leg, which bled so fast, that the damsel and his squire were in such great fear that they knew not what to do. He of the Savage, seeing his life in this extremity, thought the safest way was to venture it at once: and making a blow at Baleato, which he thought would take him unguarded, the giant received it on his shield, and it was of such force that the sword entered a little way in, and brake in three pieces, of which the shortest remained in his hand. The

moon was up, and the battle could be seen distinctly; and the damsel seeing this great misfortune, gave herself up for lost: it being natural, when fear is at the height, that despair should accompany it, especially in women, whose courage is so little that their presence of mind fails in every thing, except in things of appetite; for then their sudden determinations are better than what the wisest man in the world could devise after long reflection. He of the Savage, great as his resolution was, and his heart able to withstand any fear, yet could not but fear this great danger; and seeing that Baleato made another stroke at him with full force, he took the shield of Bracolan in both hands, and caught it; the sword bit in so deep that it reached through to the handle; he let it fall, and Baleato drew it to him, hanging on his sword. He of the Savage, seeing him thus clogged, thought with the piece of his sword to dig at his head. Baleato drew back to avoid this: now the bank had been hollowed by the freshes of many years, and as in stepping back he trod near the brink, it gave way under him; it was steep in that part—

own he fell, and came upon the stones with such force that there was an end of his days.

The knight went down to him, and seeing him lie dead was greatly rejoiced; then he looked to his wounds, which stood in need of remedy, and the damsel and his squire bound them up as well as they could. Balegto's squire fled to one of his castles, to tell the news. The knight mounted the giant's horse, for his own had had his leg broken in fighting, and they returned to the hermitage.

When they were come to the cell, the good old hermit, albeit he was somewhat offended with him, yet he received him lovingly, as his order required, and on such a poor bed as he had for guests, for his own was far poorer, he caused him to lie down, using good regard unto him, as one who knew something of that art and mystery. This done, he gave thanks to God that the land was rid of these enemies to all mankind. When it was day, one of the things which he most endeavoured was to send away the damsel,

seeing she might now travel without danger. At this the knight was nothing sorry, his condition being, when he was satisfied with one presently to wish for another; but she was much troubled, that of women being, when they have once given themselves, not to wish to part. Howbeit, when that the moment of her departure came, they took leave, she with tears, and he with amorous speeches, feigned after his wonted way.

CHAPTER 105.

On the next day following, the knights which belonged to the giants, seeing their lords dead, and no hope of succour, took counsel together what they should do, and held it best to go to the knight of the Savage Man, and of their own accord give him the keys of the castle. In this determination they came to the hermit's cell, where they found him lying on his bed, for that he was still weak and not well disposed; they comparing his young years with the nobleness of his exploits, received great cause of admiration. At last, he that was judge to be most eloquent among them, entered into these speeches.

Certes, sir knight, it would now see
error to deny the power of fortune,
we see the puissance of Bracolan
Baleato brought to utter confusion by
hand—a thing little to have been l
for. Hereby doth it appear not onl
your courage is surpassing great, but
that she favours you, or that God fighte
you: great folly then would it be for
to attempt to oppose you, and better d
areed in yielding themselves to your
than in resisting your might; for it
be believed, that mercy will not be
wanting in him who aboundeth with
virtues. In this opinion we present
selves before you, believing that he
hath so well known how to conque
guilty, will willingly pardon them in
there is no guilt. Though we have
servants of your enemies, we now yiel
selves as friends; and for the more se
behold, here are the keys of the castles,
have cost you so much blood; do with
what you please, and with us also, a
ing to your pleasure; though cruelty
not to be used towards men who
themselves. To this he returned this a

Your speeches are so honest, and so well repleted with courtesy that I am sorry the little I can do will not suffer me to let you understand how much I account of your gentleness; but I will ask the king my grandfather to reward your service. Then took he the keys of the castles, wherewith he was right well contented, seeing the issue so fortunate, where the beginning seemed so doubtful.

The knights remained, keeping him company, in respect of the honourable promise he had made them, whereof they were not a little glad, in that they hoped to gain good favour in the court of England. By this time the report of this noble conquest was blazed there, where it moved a general consent of gladness, as much for the recovery of the castles, which had been considered as almost hopeless, as that they were won by his hand.

The good king Fadrique, for joy of this good hap, sent Pridos, the duke of Wales, in all speed that might be, to seek him:

who taking a galley, in short time arrived at the coast of Ireland, where finding him, and declaring the sum of his message, the knight of the Savage concluded to depart thence, notwithstanding his wounds were not thoroughly healed: so taking leave of the gentle hermit, and desiring the other knights to accompany him, they committed themselves to the seas, whereon they had not long sailed before they arrived at a port, from whence he was carried to London in a litter. Tidings being come to the king, that they were arrived in the court, he came to meet them, and casting his arms about the neck of Florian, the tears ran down his white beard, for the inward joy he conceived at his presence. Don Duardos, though he bore that joy with greater moderation, did not feel it less; and Flerida would not depart, day nor night, from his bed-side, as one who could take no rest till he was whole of his wounds.

The king did very honourably entertain the knights of the giants, for his sake, and entered them among those of his household;

for which great bounty, they witnessed themselves not unthankful, proving trusty and loyal, qualities which men sometimes have by nature, and lose by habit.

When the knight of the Savage was recovered from his wounds, news came into the English court of the imprisonment of king Polendos, Belcar, and his company, in the court of the Great Turk; which unhappy tidings moved the king and his whole court to great grief. And when it was told them that the GreatTurk had sworn to put them all to death, except the emperor would send him the knight who had carried away his daughter Targiana, Certes, said Florian, if that is to be the only remedy of their lives, I will rather go render myself into his hands, than see so many good knights perish for my sake.

I cannot believe, said Don Duardos, that while his son-in-law Albayzar is in these parts, he will do any thing which might endanger him. The emperor should, in my judgment, lay hands on him, that they might be released *in exchange*. Nay, replied he of

the Savage, I know this of the emperor, that if it were to save the whole world he would not act otherwise than what he had always thought beseemed him. The more certain therefore do I hold their destruction; I will go to his court, for it is not fitting that when all his house are adventured in such great danger, I only should be away from it. Neither the king nor Flerida could dissuade him. Don Duardos put a stop to their intreaties, for he approved of his son's determination. So contrary to their wills he departed, taking his journey towards Constantinople, being armed after his accustomed manner, and bearing in his shield his usual device, to which he was now become affectionate.

Here the history leaves him, and returneth to Florendos, who holding on his way, is by this time near the castle of Almourol, having in his journey done many noble deeds deserving commendation, which are rehearsed in the ancient Chronicles, and in which prince Floraman bore no small part. At length they reached the city of Riocraro,

which at this present is called Tomar; but was then so named, because of the clear river which passeth it by. And now, seeing himself so near the castle of Almourol, he began to be assailed by many fears, from which he could not free himself; in these careful thoughts he passed the night without repose, and in the morning they rid toward the castle; but then Albayzar, in that he knew women were more revengeful in their anger than men, began to have more fear than he had conceived before; and the more so, because he knew that Miraguarda was as extreme in rigour as in beauty; but in this he erred, for she was not so cruel to strangers, as to her dearest and best friends. Florendos had no sooner discovered the trees beside the Tagus, and through them the walls of the castle of Almourol, but his heart was touched with greater fear; and then came to mind recollection of days that were past, and fears of present danger, and remembrances of the cruelties which he had endured, all now to torment him. Albayzar too was greatly abashed at that hour, not only from the thought that he had been vanquished,

but also, he felt the shame of what had here taken place.

When they were come to the castle, they found all the gates fast locked, and the Tree of the Shields still hung with those which had there been lost; but the colour of some were now faded by the sun and by the rain. Florendos looked at them, and beholding his own shield and armour among the spoil, his eyes were filled with tears, and he stood thinking how he might sufficiently reward his squire, Armello, who had since his departure so well watched them. But in sooth he was not so much beholden to his squire as he did esteem himself, because Armello was fallen amorous of Lademia, and could have rested in no other place. He, though he looked at Florendos, knew him not, by reason of his different armour; but perceiving Floraman, he presently suspected whom it might be, and when he saw the shield of Miraguarda, was assured that it was he, and went to him, saying, Now, sir, you may discover yourself to him from whom you have so little reason to conceal yourself, especially coming with

that prize which occasioned your loss. It cannot be that the lady Miraguarda should not now feel herself beholden to you for so great a service.

Florendos then opened his helmet, and embraced Armello with the love which he had ever borne him; then he delivered him the shield of Miraguarda, and bade him set it in the place where it was wont to be, and to place that of Targiana under it, a thing which Albayzar's heart could hardly brook.

At this time came forth of the castle the giant Almourol, armed at all points, and gallantly mounted on a bay courser, supposing these knights came to demand the joust; but when he beheld the shield of Miraguarda in the place where it was wont to be, he stopt, and then knowing Florendos, by reason that his aventayle was open, he cast his lance to the ground, and with stretched-out arms came and embraced him, saying, I never doubted of what I now see; and if from henceforth the lady Miraguarda doth not change her temper towards you, I shall feel

your wrongs as one who resent a part of them for your sake; and then, without staying to hear answer, he went in to bear the tidings. And though nothing could have given Miraguarda more joy, yet she knew so to dissemble her contentment, as though she felt none; whereat Almourol was so displeased, that not being able to bear it, he manifested his wonder in the best words he could; for in truth acknowledgment, where it is due, ought not to be withheld. But such was her free condition, that neither his reasons, nor the worthy deservings of Florendos, could bend her. Almourol went away discontented and melancholick at beholding such ingratitude towards deeds which merited a different guerdon; and though he would have hidden his passion from Florendos, yet as that when it is great cannot be dissembled, he gave him occasion to understand how it was; at which he nothing marvelled, because he was wont to have no other entertainment. But as to what regarded Albayzar, he gave account to Almourol of what had been the engagement between them, and that Albayzar was come *there* for no other purpose than to be at her

disposal, according to the conditions of their battle; wherefore he besought him to go to her, and know what she would please to have done. Almourol returned to Miraguarda, and told her that Florendos, besides bringing back her shield, had brought him prisoner who had carried it away, that she might do with him as seemed good unto her. Miraguarda delayed awhile, considering what she should do; for wilful as she was, she was discreet. At length, having taken her determination, she commanded that Albayzar should be brought into her presence, and that Florendos should abide in the field. And as she had heard of the imprisonment of king Polendos, Belcar, and their companions, she ordered him to go yield himself prisoner unto king Recindos, and remain at his pleasure until the Great Turk had set them at liberty.

For more security, she made him plight his faith with all necessary ratifications, telling him that she was contented with this light punishment, though his offence deserved a far greater. Albayzar would have kissed her

hands for so great a mercy, as in truth it was to him who had feared worse, by reason of what he had heard of her nature. So he took leave of her, and of Florendos, and Floraman. But seeing as he was about to depart the shield of his lady hanging among the vanquished, he desired Almourol to intreat Miraguarda that she would bestow it upon him, in order that the days of his ill fortune might be somewhat consoled by sight of her picture; but she, who in things which related to her glory was less liberal than in others, would not consent. Albayzar then departed, so sorrowful, that he had never at any time been more so; in three days he reached the court of king Recindos, where having presented himself on the part of Miraguarda, even as she had enjoined him, he remained in his court the whole time that Polendos was prisoner. The king received him with very princely courtesy, arising from the joy he felt at having him in his power. And because one of his sons was prisoner amongst the other knights, he secretly ordered good watch to be set over him, not trusting so much to the pro-

mise which he had made Miraguarda, as to this caution. Forthwith he sent the news to the emperor, in whose court great rejoicings were made, every one praising the discretion and policy of Miraguarda. And among other things which the emperor did to her praise, he wished to see her, and have her company in his court, as well to regard her with honour equal to her worthy deserts, as also to mitigate the afflictions of his grandson Florendos. But when he perceived that his lady made no account of his travails, he determined to guard her shield again, and if any knight should arrive whom he could not overcome, he vowed never to bear arms, nor prove his chance more; though it is but ill counsel to try fortune many times.

CHAPTER 106.

When Florendos had passed one day before the castle of Almourol, on the second, as soon as it was day, he went before the shield of his lady, since he might not see the original, and fixing his eyes upon it, he uttered his complaints after this manner.

I know certainly, lady, that he which bestoweth his time in your service, receiveth great recompense, by having the means to behold your image in this portraiture, were it not that this is dumb. But you have placed it here as a net, to entangle the minds of them which are free from such thraldom; in which extremity, the party so inveigled *desireth* as well to be comforted by your

ous speech, as to be tormented by your counterfeit. As for me, I fix mine eyes your image, and behold in it many which destroy, but none to relieve hath all the show of life, to kill me, en it should hear me, is utterly dead. be contented with my sufferings, if you it you occasioned them; but you have mitted me to forgetfulness, that not r this am I remembered. If I have de- this, it is well that it should be so; ause I do not so deem of myself, I ause to complain. While he was g, Miraguarda beheld him from the ents; for being summer, it was her arise in the cool of morning, that she njoy the early songs of the nightingale, er birds who disported among the side the Tagus.

ough she perceived that his grievous tions proceeded from the depth of t, yet never the more did she pity his s estate: for such a proud opinion l of herself, that the greatest deserts orld were not sufficient to answer her

beauty, neither that Florendos could endu
too much grief for her, such was her merc
less judgment of the passions of love. Whi
he was thus complaining, and she listenin
three knights came riding through the tree
attired in rich and costly armour. The fir
of them was in green and white armour, wi
linnets of silver, and in his shield he bare
a white field the word Normandy, in blac
letters.

The armour of the second was white ar
azure, mingled together artificially, wi
streams of green interchangeably figur
thereon, and in his shield, in a field of sinopl
he had lively pictured the god Apollo. Tl
armour of the third was carnation colou
all beset with croslets of gold, and in h
shield, in a field of gules, he bare for his d
vice flames so ingeniously made, as th
seemed rather natural than fantastic. Th
came on with their helmets open, singing
virelay in three parts; and they accorded
such good music together, that Florama
who was himself well seen in that art, cor
mended it above all that ever he heard in l

life, so sweetly did their voices consent together; beside, the echo of the river, the trees, and the mountains, did answer their notes so familiarly, that it was almost as commendable as an instrument. Miraguarda, standing on the battlement, took great pleasure to hear them: but Floraman, being delighted with the song, took a knife and engraved the same on the bark of a tree, that for the worthiness thereof, it might there remain till time had consumed the tree, and as the tree grew in bigness, so the letters might be seen in more legible manner. It was in this form following:

Fair madam, if you can vouchsafe to see,
the lively picture of a careful mind,
Forlorn with grief, do you but look on me,
and judge if fortune be not most unkind,
That he which sues, and serveth faithfully,
Should be repay'd with extreme cruelty.

What greater torments to a gentle mind,
than to be scorned where he liketh most?
What state of refuge can he hope to find,
where each thing doth at his misfortune boast?

Condemn'd, confounded, with rebuke and blame;
Yet ignorant from whence the causes came.

So heavy is the weighty yoke of love,
when quaintest looks afford discourtesy,
That wise is he that doth the passions prove,
and yet can keep himself at liberty.
But he whose wits are ravished by stealth,
Had need of physic in his greatest health.

Some men in love commend their happiness,
their quiet, sweet, and delicate delight;
And I can boast of fortune's frowardness,
her extreme rigour, and severe despight.
But for the sweetness other men have felt,
I came too late, my part was elsewhere dealt.

Yet can I say, no man hath been more just,
nor served his lady with more due regard:
But she, being governed by her own mistrust,
denies her servant his deserv'd reward;
This my misfortune waxeth more and more,
Yet will I suffer, though I die therefore.

The knights had no sooner espied armed men before the castle, but they left their singing, and pulled down their beavers, le

they should be known; and when they came before the tree where the shields were hanging, they began greatly to commend his valour who had won them. The knight in the green and white armour then advanced a little, and lifting his eyes to the portrait of Miraguarda, said in a loud voice, This is a countenance which might change any affection more free than mine. I rejoice that, having seen it, the intention which led me hither is not changed; but if any of those knights which guard this pass wish to break a couple of lances with me, I will do my endeavour, on condition he bind me not to more; because I fear these beauties will discomfit him who offends them, and favour him who is their champion. Do not deceive yourself in that, said Florendos, who was by this time ready, for it is only towards her servants that this lady is rigorous. Take your ground, as you desire to joust, and I will to the best of my power satisfy you.

With these words they parted to fetch their course, and met together with such force, that *their lances flew up* into the air in pieces,

and so passed on bravely, not being any thing shaken at the first encounter. The giant Almourol seeing them destitute of lances, caused some to be brought forth of the castle, which being delivered to their squires, they went and served their lords: the second time, as they ran with yet greater violence, their encounter was so forcible, that Florendos lost one of his stirrups, taking a reverse which was somewhat unseemly; and the other went to the ground over his horse's heels; but he fell on his feet, like one who was ready at all times, and being out of measure displeased at his fall, drew his sword with these words:

Sir knight, though I requested nothing more than to joust, I beseech you let us do battle with our swords; if in the end it be your good hap to vanquish me, your valour shall have the larger estimation. I know not, answered Florendos, if your companions would hold themselves aggrieved, for I see them ready for the joust; let me accomplish it with them, there will be time enough afterwards. And without delay, taking another

lance from Armello, he ran against the knight in the white and gray armour, with Apollo in his shield. The encounter was such, that the horse of Florendos fell upon his knees, and he lost both his stirrups; but the other received such a shock, that his horse and he fell together, and the horse falling upon him, did somewhat hurt one of his legs.

Florendos having righted himself in the saddle, called to the third knight, who being somewhat moved at the misfortune of his companions, put himself upon the adventure; at the first offer they missed in their meeting, whereupon they took their second career so worthily against each other, as they brake their lances bravely, and passed on to a third encounter. Floraman and Almourol made great estimation of the noble behaviour of these three knights. Miraguarda for many days had seen neither joust nor battle before her castle, and this therefore brought to memory the things past; but it was not for her to requite the deserts of any one. They now, as each from his wonted confidence was melan-

cholick that he had not overthrown the other, met in the third career with such force that both shields and armour failing, the knight went to the ground; and Florendos losing his stirrups, caught hold of his horse's neck, but speedily recovered himself, being somewhat abashed thereat. He with whom he first jousted, then came to him, sword in hand, saying,

Such is my earnest desire, sir knight, to try myself with you, that I should be grieved not to do it. I beseech you do not deny me this, for I perceive that few things can make you fear. You know so well how to ask, replied Florendos, that it would be ill-breeding in me to refuse. So alighting from his horse, he drew his sword; but the knight which bare in his shield the device of Apollo, and from whom nothing was hid, stepped between them, saying, Sir Florendos, this is victory enough over your friends, and though you gain honour with us, we lose none with you, for defeat from your hand is not to be held injurious. This man who is so earnest in provoking you to the combat, is your friend

rince Beroldo, who knows not whom he is rovoking; the other is your brother, Platir; nd I am your servant, Daliarte, who though knew you at first, yet would I not make any hew thereof, to the end that the lady Miraguarda might behold your deeds anew; for I fear she has forgotten the past.

Florendos took off his helmet, and taking Daliarte in his arms, complained against him for having permitted those jousts; and then he embraced prince Beroldo and Platir, and they all did the same to Floraman, who was, as ye have heard, one of the men whose company and friendship was esteemed the most in those days; so they sitting down all together, passed away the greatest part of the day in talking over their affairs, with that love which there was between them, the three companions greatly desiring to see Miraguarda; but so dainty was she in shewing herself, that she never came to the window except when she could see the field dyed with blood, and strewn with arms, and lives in danger; a sight which she did oftentimes behold *before the castle.*

At length, when it was evening, they
their leave of them, taking their jo
towards the city of Constantinople, v
was the cause why they left the kir
Spain's court. Florendos, accompanied
his careful passion, and his friend Flora
remained still to keep the pass which h
so long maintained, not lamenting h
fortune, though he had cause; for he
tries his fortune should know how to
all things, wondering at few things, and
impatient at none.

CHAPTER 107.

The three knights which jousted against Florendos, did not linger or loiter in any place till they came into Greece; where, by chance as they travelled, they met with the princess of Thrace, being worthily guarded by many noble gentlemen, some that employed themselves in knightly service, to gain the good opinion of the princess, and others that uttered many amorous conceits, to inveigle her fancy towards them in marriage; and so they passed away the time till they arrived at Constantinople. But because the history doth make mention hereafter of her royal receiving into the city, it now returns to Florendos, who, on the second day after they had left him, as he was walking along the river-

side with Floraman, armed at all points except the head, espied two boats well furnished with oars coming down the stream in the foremost whereof sate four damsels at the poop, attired alike, and tuning their lutes, whereto their voices delivered such pleasant ditties, as they might well have been compared with the three knights that had taken their way to Constantinople, if they had stayed still at the castle of Almourol, to have made trial; and the oars were moved so silently that they made no disturbance to the sounds. The other boat was covered with a tilt of surpassing richness, and there under a pavilion of inestimable value, sat a damsel on cushions of velvet embroidered richly with gold, whose countenance being marvellous beautiful, shewed her to be the lady of that flotilla. She was gallantly attired in garments of a new invention, and over all she wore a cloak of black taffeta, for it was in the heat of summer, and slashed in the sleeves and in other fit places, and the slashes gathered with clasps of gold, enamelled with birds and other gay devices of divers kinds; and that she might be better

discerned, the heat of the day being past, and the sun declining, she gave commandment, that the curtains of the tilt should be lifted up; when Florendos and Floraman, might at will behold her, and at her feet they might see sitting two dames and a damsel, and between them a knight reclining upon cushions of dark velvet: his arms were diapred with green and gold, and he bare for his device, in a field vert, Cupid fast linked in chains, his bow and arrows lying before him broken in pieces, and himself like one vanquished, lying on his face, while a fair damsel set her feet upon him. The boatmen were clad in the same gay livery, that in that company there might appear nothing sad; they brought the prow of the boats to the foot of the castle rock, the music still continuing, which being on the water, and echoing in the hollows of the rock, became more delightful.

Florendos and Floraman stood eying them awhile, and Florendos, touched with envy at the happiness which the knight of the boat seemed to enjoy, could not conceal his

grief, these being in truth the thing
should be grieved for: and he said,
that all misfortunes are reserved
and for that reason I see them in n
By this there came a damsel out of t
cipal boat, and out of the other two
to accompany her, who as they p
knights made a slight courtesy towar
and went on to the Tree of the
where they stopt awhile, and the
beholding the portrait of Miraguarda
to the squires, saying, I fear our l
return with less contentment than she
So she proceeded on towards the
where, after her bidding had been c
to Miraguarda, she was admitted
apartment which overlooked the riv
though in the works and adornments
castle there was much to see, yet w

---

* Anthony Munday adds, *the base stone of St Rock, may not presume to paragon itself with a pure diamond.* The simile is noticed, because it shows t stone, as it is commonly called, was better known it is at present. I think I have seen somewhere, ments were made of it, as indeed seems here to be

had fixed her eyes upon the lady thereof, she forgot all; and albeit her discretion was great, remained for a while so abashed, that she knew not what to say. Howbeit, when she had recovered, being ashamed to have been so confused, she said, Lady Arnalta, the princess of Navarre, my mistress, by me kisseth your hand for the desire she hath to do you service and converse with you; and for this love she hath left her house to see you, with a lesser train than beseemeth her estate. She is at the foot of your castle in a boat, waiting for me, having willed that you should first know of her coming, that you may with the less displeasure receive her.

Damsel, she replied, it lieth not in me to grant your lady's request, which is no small grief to me; and the coming of the princess of Navarre is as acceptable to me, as the greatest good fortune and honour in the world beside, that might happen to me; but the custom of this castle is flatly against it, in that the entrance is as well defended against women as men. And though I, for

the good affection I bear to your lady, shoul
wish to break the custom, the giant Almou
rol, whose authority here stretcheth furthe
than mine, would nowise agree thereto. H
hath only permitted your entrance inasmuc
as you come with the bidding of anothe
Kiss her hands for me, and excuse me, I be
seech you, with the best words you can; fe
I am so troubled at being able to do so littl
that I know not what to say. Lady, replie
the damsel, I well believe so, and if th
princess will believe me, she will not b
offended; for certes, a greater disconten
would she receive if she should enter her
Then took she her leave and went to he
lady, who, as it is the nature of women t
listen to no excuse in things which displeas
them, grew into so great melancholy, tha
she could neither listen to her, nor to any on
Her knight, seeing her thus discontente
arose, saying, Lady, in my judgment, yo
should resent this less; for if Miraguard
maketh refusal of your entry into her castl
it is that she may not be undeceived by th
difference which there is between your beaut
and hers; and this fear which she hath, is

sufficient testimony of the truth. Be not offended therefore, for you ought to return with the greatest glory in this world.

These words were of such force with her vanity that she contented herself: and because she would not presently depart thence, without seeing some of the things of that land, she bade her knight go to the place where the shields hanged, and from thence bring her that of Miraguarda, because she wished to see it, and to carry it away with her.

The knight esteemed this commandment highly, and as a favour; and speaking to the damsel, she presently went to Florendos and Floraman, saying, Sirs, yonder knight of the Boat desireth you to send him the shield with the portraiture of Miraguarda, that his lady may do with it what she esteemeth best; and if you deny his demand, he shall be constrained to fetch it away by force, which he would be loth to do, as he would not willingly have any difference with the knights of this country.

Fair damsel, replied Florendos, this kn it well appears, knows not how dear shield costs him who only enjoys it wit eyes, much more him who would car away so lightly. Tell him to come o the boat and fetch it. I wait here to d it, and if he conquers me, he may b away. If he hath no horse, we will do l on foot; if at the end he wins it, I shal my life, and rest from my miseries. E peradventure his confidence may de him, let him tell me what he will lea token that he hath been vanquished; fc shield which he demandeth will alway some trophy of its victory.

The damsel returned with this answer, the knight without delay took leave o lady, and leaped ashore, being so gallan well-made a personage that his appea was much to be dreaded; and accomp with two squires, he came towards Flor with a haughty step, to whom, when he somewhat near, he said with a loud v I see well, sir knight, that good coun not to be used towards them who are

small discretion, as they cannot take it when it is offered: I willed you to send me the shield, that you might not oblige me to come and take it: but I perceive, you had rather lose it to your cost, than give it with honour;—you shall now see what you have gained by this. The pledge which you require I have not; conquer me, and then take what satisfaction you will. I perceive, replied Florendos, there is nothing to be said. By this time the window was making ready for Miraguarda to behold the battle from it. At this Florendos paused a little, for he had not seen her before since his coming to the castle; and having fixed his eyes upon her, he remained gazing till he had forgotten himself, and the combat was quite and clean out of his mind; which the strange knight perceiving, he took him by the arm and thus awaked him:

Sir knight, he that hath to enter combat with me must not pass the time in these musings. Come to yourself, or I shall carry off this shield; for I cannot tarry long in time of haste. Florendos feeling himself

taken by the arm, remembered presentl
what he had to do: whereupon he withdre
his eyes from the place where they were s
greatly affectioned, and being angry that h
had forgotten himself, replied, It doth di
please me, sir, to enter the combat with yo
for you take me in an hour when I have arm
of vantage. He of the Boat answered, tha
you may perceive what small succour thes
imaginations can afford you, defend yoursel

With these words he struck him such a blo
on the crest of his helmet, as the weight
ness thereof constrained him to bow dow
his head to his breast; whereat Florend
was little pleased, and thought more of h
enemy; but he was not slack in requit
thereof, which was so worthily given, tha
the knight's shield was cleft in two: where
he was offended without measure, beholdin
the image of his lady so martyred, and h
began to rage like one who was void of judg
ment.

Florendos, who stood in fear of his force, gav
good heed to his strokes, waiting till part c

his fury should be spent, when they would fall lighter, and he, being wearied, would be the easier subdued. It was as he expected; the knight seeking to take vengeance for the displeasure which he resented at the defacement of his shield, laboured and gave so many blows, that at length he could scarcely move; and though Florendos made him deliver the greater number in vain, yet he could not avoid them so well but that he was somewhat wounded. Seeing, however, that his enemy waxed faint and he was in full strength, he began anew to strike him, laying on the edge of his sword, which every time cut through his arms and entered into the flesh, so that in short time he brought him to such weakness that he could hardly continue on foot; and knowing this, he quickened his blows with such force and fury, that there scarcely seemed to be any interval between them. The knight would fain have taken breath; but as this was not allowed him, he put out all his strength to defend himself, till at length losing all strength, he fell senseless to the ground, more for weariness than for his wounds. Arnalta, who was as

leave is to love, when she saw him
commanded her boatmen to row
her knight, and
estimation of him,
had never seen him before.

helmet, and giving him
and being greatly discon-
besought him, when he
revenge he pleased, to let
heart could not endure
face which had cost him
have of you, he re
should do whatever th
command, for I am
prisoner can impose n
Almourol, therefore
her pleasure, an
have nothing more t

of the knight, went
Miraguarda, who,
ness, returned this
take oath never to
and that he

should bear the device in his shield reversed, in respect she did think it unreasonable, that love should be held captive under the power of his vassal: therefore he should cause Cupid to be painted there, holding a knight bathed in blood under his feet.

Albeit this judgment was sharp and rigorous, yet the knight could not gainsay: so causing some regard to be used to his wounds, the next day he departed thence, very sorrowful to think in what displeasure his lady so suddenly went away.

Florendos remained awhile at the curing of his wounds, and in the mean time Floraman maintained the custom, accomplishing many haughty and noble deeds for him; but Miraguarda never vouchsafed to manifest any satisfaction at what was atchieved for her sake; and this was well, for if at any time she should yield herself, the victory would be more delightful, inasmuch as he who obtains any glory with little cost, never greatly delighteth therein.

CHAPTER 108.

That you may understand who the knight was that came in company of Arnalta, it is related how Drapos, duke of Normandy, the son-in-law of Frisol, king of Hungaria, had to issue two sons, whereof one was named Frisol, after his grandfather, and the other Dragonalte, who, for that it was not long since he was reported a knight at arms, was as yet not known. This Dragonalte being a gallant youth, and meetly endued with strength to bear arms, beside the great fame of the noble exploits of his father and grandfather, did so embolden him in courageous desire, as he loathed to spend his life in ease or slothful idleness; whereupon he left the place where he had been nourished and

brought up, addicting his mind to the search of knightly adventures, and would not go to the court of the emperor Palmerin till first the renown of his deeds might give the greater grace to his person.

In this haughty desire, accompanied with one squire to bear his shield and helmet, he took his way towards the realm of Spain, meaning to find the castle of Almourol, that he might approve his valour against the knight that kept the shield of Miraguarda; but as he journied thitherward, through the realm of Navarre, he happened to the passage which was guarded by Arnalta's knights, whereof two were vanquished by his noble valour. She well noting his worthy behaviour, as also that he was young and fair, welcomed him into the castle, where she entertained him with such honour as she was accustomed to use towards them who resembled him; and he beholding Arnalta enriched with so great beauty, and understanding that her dowry was to be queen of Navarre, being also young, and having a heart unoccupied, began to wax amorous of her,

so that on her he thought depended h
struction or his glory. And finding th
was desirous to go see Miraguarda, he
offer to bear her company in her jou
And as the way of most women, wher
are not under subjection, is to waste
time in pilgrimages, especially such a
little fond of being at rest, she would
no longer delay than was necessary t
vide adornments for the journey; nor
much that Arnalta should thus hastily d
since one who so lightly resolves, lightl
her resolutions in effect. So she set fo
accompanied with the dames, and da
and squires, as you have heard before,
with Dragonalte, who many times b
way essayed knightly occasions, where
tune did still afford him the victory.

Thus they went on till they came to
on the Tagus, which was two leagues
the castle of Almourol, where they stay
they had provided boats, wherein they
to the castle, and sped there as you
heard; and Arnalta seeing Dragonalt
quered, converted her love into hatre

angrily departed towards Navarre, intending never to see him again.

But as she could be easily intreated to anger, even so could she be as easily won to forget her anger, her unstaidness was such, and her good will to love so great. In this manner it chanced to Dragonalte, who continuing his affection to her, who long time abhorred him, yet in the end he obtained her good will in marriage, she making him king of Navarre: therefore let no one despair in these matters, for perseverance is all. Now then leaving them for things of more importance in this chronicle, the history saith, that the princess of Thrace being ready to depart towards the court of the emperor Palmerin, the queen Carmelia, her grandmother, sent her away, worthily accompanied with ladies and damsels and lords of the realm, with such pomp as beseemed her person; and so many errant knights came to meet her and accompany her on the way, that when she approached Constantinople all the fields shone from afar with glittering arms and singular devices, so that it rather seemed to

be an army prepared for war, than the gallantries of peace. Some among them came to see her, others to serve her, and others with hope to win her in marriage, confiding in the merit of their deeds, and in the greatness of their states. There came with her prince Graciano, Beroldo with his companions Daliarte and Platir, and all the other young knights of the emperor's household. He himself, with all the others whom he had in the city, went three leagues out to receive her. Primaleon went before him. Lionarda being advertised of their coming, left her litter, and mounted on a goodly white palfrey, adorned for that day with harness full rich and costly to behold: she herself was attired in the greekish fashion, that she might the better delight the eyes of them which did behold her; her robe was of carnation velvet, fairly embroidered with parchment lace of gold; her cloak was of scarlet, closed before with diamond buttons, and all the compass of the cloak was likewise garnished with diamonds, having between every diamond a rank of very glorious orient pearl, set in such order as they did marvellously

deck and set forth her costly vesture; so that all this in aid of her natural beauty, she seemed so fair, that many whose thoughts were free before, were now so changed, that from thenceforth they past their time less at ease than they had been wont to do.

The emperor, albeit he was far in years, yet he had attired himself youthfully. After he had received Lionarda with that welcome which he was accustomed to bestow, he took place of Primaleon his son, who was talking with her, and came on accompanying her, so charmed with her that he suffered none else to approach, neither looked at any of those princes who had taken off their helmets, and came near him to kiss his hand. Lionarda, when the emperor approached her, seeing his great age, and the authority of his presence, thought that all which she had heard of his fame was little in respect of him; and with all the courtesy and reverence she could, she stooped to kiss his hand for the favour which he had vouchsafed her in permitting her to reside

in his house and court. But he, who thought it was he who received the favour, repaid her with other words, arising from the sincerity of his deeds. So they proceeded on their way towards the city, and he kept his eyes still fixed upon her, being amazed at her beauty. But as they went, he met with something which made him take them off; for about a quarter of a league from Constantinople, by the hermitage of St. Louis, which stood hard by the public way, and under the shade of some ash trees which surrounded it, they saw a knight in carnation coloured arms, so thick beset with little shrubs of gold, as the whole armour was gallantly set forth therewith, his helmet likewise after the same manner; and in his shield he bare for his device in a field of azure, a cypress tree hung with nuts of gold. He was mounted on a lusty bay courser, having attending on him two squires, one of them carrying a shield covered over with cloth, so that the device thereof could not be discerned; the other went before the emperor, and having reined his palfrey, began to salute him in this order:

Sir, the knight whom you behold under yonder ash trees, being desirous to try himself against the knights of your court, of whose fame the whole world is envious, says that it is but short time since he bare armour, and now, to make proof of himself, he is determined this day to guard this passage as long as his strength sufficeth. Wherefore he humbly desireth your highness that you would command your knights to joust with him, for he defies them all one by one, except the prince Primaleon, your son, against whom he will not take a lance.

The emperor was joyful at this, for that it was a mean whereby Lionarda might receive some pleasure, and perceive the valour and prowess of the knights of his court; and having opinion that the knight which had enterprized to guard the passage was somewhat confident of himself, he returned the squire this answer, with a chearful countenance and a smiling: Say unto the knight, that I freely give him leave, and I am sorry that my aged years will not suffer me to be one among the challenged to free the way

for the lady Lionarda's passage. I pro
him not to pass till one of my knights
freed it, or till all are overthrown, sinc
my own kingdom I find strangers
maintain the road against me. Then
ing at her when the squire was gone, he
Think you not, lady, that he who keep
road against me at my own gate, and
you in my company, would not do it b
where I had not you for my helper? C
the knight is either one of no small cou
or he doth embolden himself by mean
your beauty; and hoping to move you to
him in good conceit, doth offer his pers
endure a doubtful trial.

Scantly had the emperor concluded h
tent, when he saw Roramonte, who in his
was esteemed for an especial knight,
flying over his horse's heels, the other s
as firm in his saddle as if he had not
touched. This encounter struck a great
into the others, who began to fea
mishap which might befal them. F
they who seek things of honour do no
danger to their persons, every one

not to be the last in adventuring himself. The first among them who couched his lance, was Frisol, and he fared like the former; he of the Ash Trees passed by as steadily as in the former encounter; and then turning the reins, took another lance from many which were against the trees, having been placed there by his order, that there might be no want of them. Having taken his post, he saw that Graciano was coming against him with all the force which his horse could carry; and giving his own the spur, he met him in the midst of the shield with such might, that pierceing through that and all his other arms, he bore him to the ground, and certes had slain him if the blow had not been something aslant. Beroldo came after him; but as he of the Ash Trees was that day showing all his strength, Beroldo went like the rest to the ground, whereat the emperor had much to think. Then Pramiante came, and because in their encounter the horse tripped upon the root of one of the trees which rose a little above the soil, and fell with him, he would not acknowledge himself to be overthrown; and though some

held this not a sufficient reason, the other told him to mount again as often as he pleased, for he would be sooner tired with mounting than himself in overthrowing him. These words were judged by some to be haughty; others affirmed that they sprang from the confidence which he had in himself. Dramiante went again to horse, being melancholick at his disaster; but better had it been for him to have put up with it, than to return to the joust, for the knight gave him such an encounter, that he went through shield and armour, and bore him to the ground badly wounded in the attaint; and even as it was, he favoured him by not giving the blow full, or else he had surely been in great danger. This encounter made the emperor take less delight in the joust than he had manifested before, for he now dreaded the strength of this knight, and began to fear some displeasure. Then Don Rosuel advanced, who was held an excellent one among the good; and though his confidence made him lose all fear, nevertheless he was undeceived; for at the second career, he went to keep his fellows company, he of the

Ash Trees losing his stirrups, at which he was troubled, in that it had befallen him at such a time. Howbeit, righting himself in his seat, he resumed his place, and saw that the doughty Platir advanced against him; their spears brake, and they met together shield and body; Platir and his horse went to the ground, and the other was dizzy with the shock.

The emperor was so amazed that he knew not well what to say; Primaleon was as much so: some suspected that it was Palmerin, for from no other was such prowess to be expected; but satisfying themselves that it was not he, they knew not what to think; for that it should be him of the Savage was not to be believed, because they knew that he remained in the king of England's court. So that the more they were assured that it was neither of these, the more they held it for a great thing that such feats should be atchieved by one unknown. And as they who had been overthrown were among the best of the court, and those in whom there might have been most confidence, they lost all hope

that any one would now be able to overthrow him; for Estrelante, Belisarte, and Francian, had already jousted. And now when there were none to advance, Pompides and Blandidon happened to arrive. The emperor having afforded them a gracious welcome, according to what they were, and the love which he bare them, told them how the adventure stood, and requested that they would do their endeavour to free the passage for the lady Lionarda, since there were no others from whom it could be expected.

We will 'try our strength, answered Pompides, to serve your highness, but not with any belief that we can atchieve that wherein these renowned knights have failed. And no sooner had he uttered these words, than he gave the spurs to his horse against the strange knight, who came to meet him. And not to dwell for ever upon encounters, suffice it to say, that Pompides and Blandidon went to keep the others company, he of the Ash Trees receiving some reverses, and losing his stirrups.

Then when he saw that there was no more to

be done, he took off his helmet, and came unto the emperor to kiss his hand; but when the emperor perceived that it was his grandson Florian, he was then as joyful of his happy victory, as before he was aggrieved to see his knights so vanquished: yea, themselves did think it no dishonour to them to be overthrown by him; so that what they had before held as a disparagement, they now received contentedly. Florian having kissed the hands of the emperor and Primaleon, offered to do the like to the princess Lionarda; but she seeing one of such young years, to be accompanied with such singular prowess, could not but in some degree yield him her good will and the freedom of her heart; howbeit with that grace and beauty with the which nature had endowed her, she received him with the best and most becoming words that could be. And he, though his liberty till then had been full hard to be subdued by amorous passions, felt himself then assailed by them, the presence of Lionarda being powerful in occasioning such extremes.

The emperor seeing the passage free, said to the princess, Lady, he who kept the road against us, now leaves it open; let us proceed before another may impede it, though having such a champion on our side, I know not of whom we need stand in fear.

CHAPTER 109.

When they were come into the city, they were received by the people marvellous triumphantly, who presented many rare inventions, thinking thereby to please the emperor, though there were some who censured these rejoicings in a time of general grief, because of the imprisonment of king Polendos, Belcar, Onistaldo, and the other good knights who were in the power of the Turk. When they reached the palace, the empress, with Gridonia and Polinarda, came to receive Lionarda in the outer room of their apartments, treating her with courtesy as an equal, and showing to her all possible love and welcome; whereat she received great contentation, thinking that they which re-

ceived her with such ceremony at her first arrival, would continue to entreat her thus honourably.

After the empress and Gridonia had ended their salutations, Polinarda next embraced her, holding in much her beauty and appearance. Whoso had then seen them could ill have determined whether there was any advantage between them. Each touched with envy at what she saw before her, feared that the person of the other might throw some shade on her. But the sight of Lionarda greatly heightened Polinarda's love towards Palmerin, seeing that the faith with which he served her was so sincere, that it could not be shaken by such an especial treasure, which he had won by so great pain and travail.

So holding one another by the hand, they followed the empress into her chamber, where having seated themselves side by side, all who were present fixed their eyes upon them to behold the perfection of nature. *Florian* having kissed the empress's hand,

who embraced him many times, in that he was the son of that daughter whom she had alway loved the best, would have done the same to Gridonia, but she would not suffer him, and embraced him. From her he went to Polinarda, to whom, kneeling upon one knee, he offered the same courtesy; but she taking him by the hand, said, This is the time, sir Florian, when you should pay for the offence which you have this day given to the lady Lionarda, by hindering her of the liberty of the way, if I did not persuade myself that you are able to make her recompence by your knightly service, for the fault. To which words he replied, The will to serve her, certes, I have, and though my power is but for little, yet if favoured by her, there is nothing which would be impossible to it. And that I may bear with me some confidence which will make me adventure any thing, I beseech you persuade the princess to accept me as hers. Polinarda replied, The princess Lionarda shall gain so much in this, that I believe there is little to request. I take the hazard upon myself, and kiss her hand

for accepting you, as a favour vouchsafed to both, I alone remaining bound for it. At all these words Lionarda remained silent and abashed, being as yet so young in that house; and she now turned to Polinarda with this answer: Lady, you cannot wish or command me the thing standing with my honour, that I would be so forgetful of myself as not to perform it, and feel honoured therein. It is sufficient to make me receive this knight as mine, that he is brother to Palmerin, to whom I am so highly bound, and cousin to your highness, whom I so greatly desire to serve. If he conceit that this name can avail him in any thing, I consent that he take it; but one who performeth such atchievments, can have no need of any aid so trifling, to which he should attribute afterward the honour of his deeds. Polinarda was well pleased with this reply, as well to content the knight of the Savage, whom she much esteemed, as also to remove the suspicion she had of her singular beauty; and to remove this fear, she would willingly have had Lionarda give her affections to him, that so she might be secure of Palmerin: for in these

cases none are ever so secure as not to feel some distrust. Florian thought so much of what had past, that he knew not how to contain himself for joy; and rising up, he went to the emperor, who called him, and who seeing the talk which he held with these ladies, suspected what it might be. And from thenceforward he determined in his own mind to marry him with Lionarda, thinking that such marriage would suit the deserts of both. Polinarda begged that the princess might be her guest as long as she remained in the court; and from this time these two lived and loved so entirely together, as the one could never be without the other's company; and what occasion soever happened of secret sorrow or of joy, it was imparted to the other; for this is true friendship, and where there is not this confidence, that friendship cannot be called perfect.

At length the emperor, accompanied with Florian, withdrew himself to his chamber, where he questioned with him about the king of England, and Don Duardos, and his dear daughter Flerida, desiring, if it might

be possible, to see them before his death, which by reason of his great age he now daily expected. After he had communed with him about these things, he gave orders that he should be lodged in the palace as he was wont to be. He of the Savage could not pass the night so quietly as he was accustomed, the remembrance of Lionarda keeping him awhile from sleep.

On the next day, after mass, the emperor dined in the garden of Flerida with the empress, Gridonia, Polinarda, and her guest, giving them the noblest banquet that ever was seen; and well it was, as that was to be the last. After that the tables were withdrawn, there entered a damsel attired all in black, with a head-dress of the same colour, and two squires attending on her. Before she spake to the emperor, she kissed the hand of the empress, Gridonia, and Polinarda, who embraced her, for that she knew her to be one who had been with Targiana, at such time as she was there abiding in the court; then she went to the emperor to kiss his hand, but he withheld it, and re-

ceived her with his wonted courtesy, and enquired of her concerning the welfare of her lady. Sir, said she, if I did not first offer obeisance to your highness, it was because I am sent to the lady empress with the bidding of the princess Targiana; but as you ask how she fareth, it is so, that she hath never come forth of her chamber since the day that Polendos, your son, and the other princes and knights were committed to prison, during all which time, she hath not ceased grievously to weep and lament, insomuch as her beauty is marvellously changed. The Turk her father laboureth as much as may be to dissuade her from this mournful kind of life, but all in vain he wasteth his endeavour, for she hath said that she would never give over continual sorrow, until your knights were set at liberty.

The Turk seeing his daughter's life in this extreme point, and that the grief which hath brought her to it can in no other way be remedied than by yielding to her desire, consents to exchange them for his son-in-

law, Albayzar, whom they of Babylon requested of him, that they may enjoy among them again: for this cause the Turk hath sent hither an ambassador, will be here either this day or to-morrc

And for that the princess Targiana remen eth well the great honour you bestowe her in your court, and doubteth that ir proposal there may be some secret guile hath sent me to bring these tidings unt empress, in whose presence I have mad acquainted with that I had in charge cause it toucheth you more than it dotl other person. She, knowing the old h which her father beareth towards you, v made him seize your knights, at a time they deserved other guerdon, doth not this resolution to be so certain, but tha adventure it cloaketh some design of fa revenge. And though she desire the li of Albayzar her husband, above all things in the world, she adviseth you r deliver him till your knights are in full se that if any evil should chance afterv she may be without blame.

Certes, damsel, answered the emperor, I always believed that there was such virtue in the princess Targiana; and though the services which she received in my court were but small, I knew they were well bestowed. This advice which she gives me I hold in great esteem, nor indeed, could any thing else be expected from one of her royal condition; and I shall follow it, for as coming from such a person, and given with such intent, it is not to be rejected. When he had said this, the damsel went to Polinarda, to whom she had another message, and having delivered it, she fixed her eyes upon Lionarda; when not knowing her, and seeing her rare and singular beauty, she asked Polinarda if it were not Miraguarda, for whom Albayzar was vanquished.

It is not, answered Polinarda; this lady is the princess of Thrace, whom Palmerin disenchanted. I know now who she is, said the damsel, for I have not forgotten the adventure of the cup; and in truth, if Palmerin rejected such surpassing beauty and so great a realm, greatly is she bound unto him, for whose sake

he hath undervalued them. But then
narda, desirous to move her from talki
that matter, because she would fain nc
member how greatly she was bound,
her many questions concerning Tar
But at this time tidings were brought t
emperor, that the ambassador of the
was arrived; upon which he sent the ch
princes and knights of his court to
him, and waited when he was to re
him. The damsel then took her leave, h
to proceed to see Albayzar, and she pro
Polinarda, who would not otherwise
suffered her to depart so soon, to retu
Constantinople.

The emperor desired her to present the
sage of his good will to king Reci
as also to Albayzar; and after that he
bestowed divers rich and costly gifts o
dismissed her. The ambassador of the
was received, not as he were an enemy
as became him to whom he was sent;
sooth, though these things were thank
received, yet none could deny them
value, nor that they proved that suc

manity, virtue, and greatness of mind were to be found in only the emperor Palmerin, who received even his very enemies with love.

The ambassador having entered the city, surrounded by such noble chivalry, dismounted at the gate of the garden, where the emperor then was. Being in his presence, after he had glanced around at the things which amazed him, he somewhat inclined his head, displaying in that gesture less courtesy than pride and presumption; but the emperor, however he disesteemed such contempt, spake unto him and received him with a glad semblance, as he was ever wont to do. The Moor then delivered into his hands a letter sealed with a seal of gold, hanging by a cord of green silk. The emperor having viewed the tenor thereof, said, he perceived it was his credentials: on the morrow, if he pleased, he might deliver his embassage, and might now go take his rest.

Sir, he replied, this business is not of a na-

ture which will allow of rest, nor can I take it till I have said that with which I am come: when I have received your answer I will go rest in mine own tents, without the walls; for if I should do otherwise, the Turk my lord would peradventure be displeased. The emperor replied, Do what you imagine convenient in your own conceit; I should not for mine own part be any whit aggrieved if an ambassador of mine, being with the Turk, accepted his hospitality, so being that he fulfilled his duty in the charge committed to him. Sir, said the Turk, letting these things pass, I say, you well know that an hundred knights of your court are held as prisoners by the Turk, among whom are your son, Polendos, and Belcar, and Onistaldo, with others of equal count. And though my lord the Turk hath received some injuries from your vassals, which he might well revenge by putting these prisoners to death, nevertheless, to witness his noble nature, he is content, at the earnest entreaty of his daughter, to give them their lives, and to restore them in change for his son-in-law Albayzar, who is kept prisoner in the court of the king

of Spain, by the commandment of Miraguarda. For this you are to thank the princess Targiana, who with many tears obtained it; otherwise your knights would never have been released until you had sent him the knight of the Savage Man, who stole the princess away.

Certes, replied the emperor, I confess myself greatly bound to the princess Targiana, and next to her to Miraguarda; for had she not laid hold of Albayzar, and there had been only the virtue of the Turk to trust to, I well see how the matter would have ended: for I would never have delivered up to him the knight of the Savage Man, though all the world should have perished. Howbeit, I am content with the proposed exchange; but I know not what security is to be given me that I need not doubt its performance.

The manner in which it must be ordered, replied the ambassador, is, that every thing be trusted to the truth of my lord the Turk. Your highness must release Albayzar, and he

will send you your knights. I know not what better security can be given than this that is proposed by the Turk, whom nothing could tempt to falsify his faith.

The emperor leant upon his hand, and paused awhile, thinking what answer he should make; but he of the Savage, being better acquainted with this race, and fearing least the goodness of the emperor should induce him to trust those who were not to be trusted, rose and said, Sir, in so clear a matter what need is there to hesitate for a reply? Let your majesty remember why he detaineth your knights in prison, and you shall well perceive the trust you ought to repose in him; and if you rely upon Albayzar's virtue, I must remember you, how, not acting as might have been expected from such a person, he stole the shield of Miraguarda from Dramuziando, who defended it. My opinion is, that if king Recindos hath hitherto kept watch upon him, he should watch him yet more warily from henceforth; for in this manner the safety of your knights will be certain, and in any other I hold it very

doubtful. If the Turk or his ambassador say that this which hath been proposed proceeds from his virtue and royal inclination, I know that it proceeds from necessity; for the subjects of Albayzar require him so to do for the deliverance of their lord. Knight, replied the ambassador, now I know thee! and if the bidding on which I come did not prevent me from taking arms, I would not fail to make thee know, with what reverence thou oughtest to entertain the unreproveable word of the Turk. But there will yet come a time when thou shalt pay for this, and for the rest of thy deserts. Little contented should I be, replied he of the Savage, to do battle with you, for where so little would be gained as in conquering you, so much ought not to be risqued, as the waste of time upon things so insignificant. At this the emperor held out the sceptre which he held in his hand, to the end it should proceed no further, being somewhat inwardly sorry for what Florian had said, though he esteemed well of his counsel, and was minded to pursue it. Then turning to the ambassador, he said, You ought not to be offended, when my knights assist

me with their good advice in a matt
such weight, and especially Florian, w
my grandson, and whom it so nearly t
eth. I will believe that the truth o
Turk ought to be regarded as the best
rity in the world; but inasmuch as the gi
number of the prisoners, by reason of
hath past, would not be satisfied therew
dare not give you the reply which you d
And though I were so to do, king Rec
of Spain, I know, would not so wil
consent with me, whose son is among
princes as a prisoner, and who hath Alb
in his power: wherefore give the Tu
understand, that when he shall have
me home my imprisoned knights, then
send him Albayzar; and if it be not si
ent assurance to him that I say this, I
him as security his own daughter, the
Targiana, who will make answer for m
the knowledge she hath of me; and a
winneth or loseth more than any othe
son in this matter, having her husban
soner, she will not refuse the terms. T
my reply.

Sir, replied the ambassador, I know that sometimes ill counsels pervert good intentions, and thus it is with you. I shall depart, since there is nothing more to be done. You will do as pleaseth you. As for the lady Targiana, she I know will adventure her life to do your will; which she should not do, because you retain in your house him who did so great disservice to her father. In so doing, said the emperor, he did good service to me, inasmuch as thereby I have gained her friendship. I pray you on my behalf, and with my hearty commendations, kiss her princely hand, and tell her she hath power to dispose of me, in any thing she taketh pleasure to employ me.

The ambassador made promise to fulfil his commands, and took his leave little content with the success of his embassy, because its deceit had been frustrated. The emperor, after his departure, sate and conferred with his knights, well pleased with the course which had been taken, and still more with Miraguarda, who had been the cause of all.

CHAPTER 110.

The next day, after the ambassador wa
parted in the afternoon, as the emperoı
accompanied with divers and sundry o
princes, lords, and knights, he perceiv
enter the great hall, an aged man, so ı
weakened and over-spent with years,
seemed he was ready to fall to the e
He seemed a person of some authority,
his goodly grey locks, and his long

down to kiss his hand; but he not suffering this, assisted him to rise, and asked of him what he would have.

Sir, said this aged man, with a voice so faint and low as very hardly could be understood, for that your court is always so fortunate as to entertain noble and adventurous knights, who are ever ready to succour them that be destitute, I have good hope that they will not refuse to afford me their aid, in delivering me out of the great affliction whereinto by misfortune I am brought. These heavy and sad speeches he accompanied with such abundance of tears, as seemed sufficient to give colour to what he said. I beseech your highness, said he, that with that royalness of mind wherewith you ever assist the unhappy, you would at this time aid me in an injury the most great and grievous that ever man endured. But because the matter is of such a nature that I cannot say more without great danger, I pray you to bestow on me the knight in whom you have most confidence, and I will bring him into the place where he may not only remedy my sorrow,

trusted, yet such is the pity which to see your tears, and great old age it maketh me depart somewhat fro wonted way; for I do not think the be deceit in those grey hairs. This which you see standing by me is calle rian of the Desert: some name hi knight of the Savage Man, he is my son, and one in whom I put the g trust; let him accompany you upc danger, the greater it is, the mo will need him.

The aged man, seeing the marvellou tesy of the emperor, fell down before hi would have kissed his feet, saying, I in vain I see, most famous emperor, th

ure, and as the old man urged him to be gone armed himself presently, and departed from the court in such great haste as he had not leisure to take leave of the empress and his other friends.

The emperor fell into questioning with the knights of his court, if any of them did know that ancient man; but not one of them all could report of whence, or what he was. Primaleon marvelled at the trust which he had reposed in him, not knowing first what the adventure was. That same day Beroldo, the prince of Spain, Platir, Blandidon, Pompides, Graciano, Polinardo, Roramonte, Albanis, Don Rosuel, and the other renowned knights who were present, departed to follow Florian, for that they feared least any evil should happen to him, under the guileful dealings of this aged man.

With this the court remained desolate, and the emperor, perturbed in mind, fearing some sinister chance. He of the Savage rode on, in the company of his aged guide, all the remainder of the day, and all night,

till toward day-break, when they let their horses feed, and took a little rest; but the old man, to whom all repose was irksome, made him presently mount again. When the day was far spent they came in sight of a castle, on the top of a rock, a strong and goodly fortress in the eyes of them that did behold it, at the foot whereof a river of much water had its course; there was no ford, and they must cross it in a little boat, wherein two men could hardly pass at one time. The old man alighted from his horse, and said, You see, sir knight, if we venture ourselves together in this little boat we should expose ourselves to needless danger, from which it behoves me especially to save you, that you may be reserved for that whereto I am conducting you, wherefore I pray you that you will alight, and you for the most security shall pass over alone; then your squire and I will come one after another, and bring with us the horses; otherwise the peril is certain, and the passage doubtful. It is so much more fitting, replied he of the Savage, to err by the advice of one whose long age hath had experience of many things

than to do right by that of those who have had none, that were there no other reason I would follow your counsel; especially as there seemeth no other remedy: though in this haste with which you make me travel I am sorry to find so slow a passage. At these words he dismounted, and entered into the little boat, bidding the boatman row across; but scantly had he attained the middle of the water, when suddenly such a black and ugly cloud overshadowed him that he lost sight of those on land, and they of him, which when the squire perceived, he was about to leap into the water to follow his lord; but as he was in this desperate intent, he espied a great hill before him, covered with snow, which seemed to rise between him and his master. Upon this he turned to the old man, but he was gone, he knew not how; then the squire knew that the tears which this aged man shed in the presence of the emperor, were to no other end but only to shadow the treason which he went about. So there he stood musing a great while, and after he had canvassed out a thousand imaginations, he concluded to search his master

about all those parts, and if it were n
fortune to find him, he would then reti
the emperor's court to make known th
fortunate loss, to the end, that his fi
might take upon them to go in quest of

When he of the Savage had past the
the cloud which before had covered hi
mained upon the boat and concealed it
his sight. But as nothing could mak
fear, though he was well aware that
there was something to be feared, he l
to advance himself towards the castle,
thing being clear on that side; the roc
high and troublesome to climb, and th
mour he had on being weighty with
was constrained to rest himself three o
times by the way, so that it was night b
he reached the top.

Then the castle gates were opened, and
damsels came out with lighted torches
took him between them and led him in
as they were fair women and received

he went in gladly, never remembering danger, nor deeming that there could be any. Sometimes he fixed his eyes on one, sometimes on another, his inclination leading him to all, as is natural to men of so free a condition. Thus talking with them, he entered the castle court, which was paved with black stones, and from thence ascended to a large and ill-built hall, made after the ancient manner, where a damsel came to receive him, who was accompanied by other dames and damsels. She was of giantly appearance not only in height of stature, but also in the greatness of her limbs, for all was in proportion; about the age of sixteen, ugly, and yet withal graceful; in the dress and adornments of her person, of much manner and gaiety. She approached the knight of the Savage and took him by the hand, receiving him with as honourable a welcome as could be shewn to the person in whose hand was her life's remedy, and led him into a chamber of the same fashion as the hall, and hung with rich tapestry.

He of the Savage then took off his helmet,

offended with herself that she sho
such weakness in her towards a m
had done her so much evil. With
dignation, and calling her strong hear
she subdued that first emotion, and f
words to content him and dissemble
said, Sir Knight, my heart till no
always been troubled, for a grievou
which hath been done me, whereof I
hope to be revenged: now that I ha
methinks I have all. I pray you t
will now go rest yourself, for your tra
require some ease—to-morrow I wi
the cause wherein I stand in need of

Lady, replied he of the Savage, fi

of no greater value than it is, to hazard it in any peril for your sake: though in sooth, the greatest peril which could betide me I see present, and hold all others as little when compared with it.

The lady, who was little pleased with such language, said in reply: Now, sir, it is late; sup, and retire to rest; in the morning we will discourse of what is to be done; and then she took leave with all the courtesy which hatred and deceit could feign, and left him and went to her apartment.

The knight of the Savage remained well contented, seeing how well she had suffered his speeches; hoping that thus, by little and little, he should compass his desires; for though the damsel was not a fair woman, yet the disposition of her person, the form of her limbs, the greatness of her body, and her singular grace and air, made him affect her, thinking that if he might have a son by her, he would needs be capable of great things. With these thoughts he seated himself at the table, where he was served by the

damsels that gave him entertainment at the castle gate: one among them, who served him with the cup, was so much fairer than the rest, that she presently made him forget the lady of the castle, it being his way always to love her who was present. So talking with her and with the others, the supper past; and that being done they led him into a rich and well concerted bed-chamber, where they all assisted him to undress; and at last when they took their leave, she who had served the cup approached him, saying, Sir Knight, if time and place did not prevent, you should well perceive the good will I have to serve you; but since at present I can do no more, receive from me this ring, a jewel which I greatly esteem, and let it be the pledge of another which I desire to give you, of far greater value.

So concluding, she left the ring in his hand, and not attending answer, departed after the other damsels. He remained well pleased with this language, and when he had lain down put the ring on one of his fingers on his left hand; but incontinently he was de-

prived of all sense, for the ring had been made for this purpose, and there was a stone in it of such virtue, that he could not recover his senses till it were taken off. Immediately Arlanza, for so the damsel giantess was called who was the lady of the rest, came with them all into the chamber; and seeing him in this mortal plight, she said, Methinks, my friends, our journey is not in vain; henceforward my mother Colambar may live contented, having it in her power to take such full revenge and satisfaction for the death of her sons Bracolan and Baleato, and Calfurnio and Camboldam also, all my brethren. Then she cast her eyes upon him, and seeing how young he was, said, Certes I know not how such feats can have been performed in such tender years, nor can I believe it possible, unless the favour of the gods had been on his side: nor is this to be doubted, for the nature of this man, according to his beauty, is conformable to theirs; wherefore I believe he hath some affinity with them; and I could pardon him if the injury which he hath done me were any thing less than it is. But who could resent so little the

death of four such brethren, and the jc
which my mother and theirs will receive, :
seeing in her power the slayer of her sons
Of a truth, old hatred and present lov
arising from the sight of his beauty, were :
that hour struggling within her. And thoug
love had on its side her green youth and th
presence of Florian, yet long hatred, an
the blood of her brethren which was the
present to her memory, prevailed. And :
women for the most part, when they hav
once determined upon a thing are eager t
put it in effect, she would without delay hav
given orders to cut off his head; but at th
time the old man came in, and dissuaded h
from this intent, saying, There is nothin
lady, now to fear; this knight is in yo
power; do not let the pleasure of his deat
be yours alone, but reserve it for your m
ther, and deprive not her of the joy sl
will take in seeing him die that hath cut c
the flowers of her honourable lineage; let
embark him for the island, and deliver him
her alive as he is, that she may determine hc
and in what manner he shall die, as her gri
and passion may teach her.

Albeit my mind was otherwise bent, answered Arlanza, yet I will follow your counsel; wherefore I desire you early in the morning to see that the ship be ready, for my heart will not suffer me to be at rest in this business. Having thus determined, they left him senseless in the chamber, lying at the mercy of his enemies, far from knowing his danger, and still farther from being able to remedy it.

CHAPTER III.

The history saith, that Colambar, the mother of the giants Bracolan and Baleato, whom he of the Savage slew in Ireland, as hath been before related, as she had no other sons, and loved these with the perfect love of a mother, when she was certified of their death, made no shew of sorrow, as women commonly are wont to do, but with a manly heart concealed so great a grief, being determined alway to seek all ways of vengeance which time and chance might offer. With this determination, she cast about in her mind a thousand devices to accomplish it; but when she could find none which seemed effectual, she applied for help to an old knight, who had been bred up by the

giant her husband, and now lived in another island, in whom she trusted to find good counsel: for beside being full of experience by reason of his years, he was by nature wise, crafty, and also something of a magician. When Alfernao, as he was called, saw Colambar, he was moved to take compassion on her, and promised to help her in any thing he could to take revengement on the knight of the Savage Man, whom he knew by his art to be in the court of Constantinople; whereupon he said, Madam, if so be it shall like you to follow my counsel, I dare promise to make you contented. She replied, I would not have come to you from so far off, if I had not persuaded myself on your virtue and assured friendship, being altogether minded to follow your counsel. Then, lady, said Alfernao, you shall perceive what a platform I have laid. The knight of the Savage Man is at this present in the court of the emperor of Greece, his grandfather, where he is grown so amorous in love, that he intendeth not to depart of a long time from Constantinople; yet is he so haughty minded, that no adventure can offer which he will not

lightly accept. I will go to the court, and there prostrating myself before the emperor, in speeches very sad and pitifully couched, and with many tears, I will earnestly request him to succour me in affairs of great danger, whereout it is impossible for me to escape, or help myself, without the aid of one of his best knights, even he that is esteemed the hardiest amongst them all. I will desire that I may have no other, but only him. This request I know he will not deny me, shadowing my intent with such behaviour of virtue as I can well enough; and he of the Savage will, I believe, of his own courage offer himself; but though the emperor should give me another, I will so manage as to have him: and having once gotten him, I will conduct him to a castle which is upon the frontiers of Greece and Hungary; but your daughter, the lady Arlanza, must be there, and I will tell him that the succour which I have implored is for her; and when he is in the castle, we will so devise that one of her damsels shall put into his hand your ring of sleep, which the lady Arlanza shall take with her for that purpose; and when he is

overcome by it, and deprived of all sense and all strength, we will bring him to you, to receive such due reward as you shall think yourself contented withal.

My friend Alfernao, replied Colambar, I knew well that the remedy of my sorrows, and the vengeance for my children, lay altogether in you: this which you offer is so great a thing, that I know not wherewith to repay you; and since such true loyalty cannot be requited as it deserves, I beseech you accept for guerdon the true desire which you know I have to be grateful. I consent to what you propose, believing that such perfect prudence cannot do anything amiss.

Then she presently prepared a ship, wherein her daughter was embarked, accompanied with four damsels and as many knights, the wind and sea serving them so well, as in few days they took landing not far from the castle, in which the ancient knight Alfernao left her with her company, and took his way to the court of the emperor of Greece; from whence, by the subtle means you have

board, he brought him of the savage
then to return: That night being pas
the following morning, as soon as
break of day, they put their prisoner
litter, fearing lest he might be seen
known of any, and carried him to the
where their ship was awaiting them.
having embarked, the mariners hoisted
sails, and having a pleasant gale of
they committed themselves to the mer
the seas, well contented that they had
so well, and taken their prize.

Here the history leaveth him, and retu
to his squire, who, when he had lo
master, and perceived the deceit which
been wrought him, took the way to Co
tinople, not meeting any person all tha
from whom he could enquire any thing
the next day, as he passed over a fore
perceived a knight come forth from
the trees, where he had that night slep
was richly armed, having in his shield,
was borne by his squire, a golden tyg
a field of vert; whereupon he presently
to the squire, whom when he behel

knew that it was Selviam, and the knight before him to be Palmerin of England: forthwith he went to him, with the tears trickling down his cheeks, and said, Sir, albeit the news I have to declare unto you of your brother Florian be not such as I would they were, yet do I rejoice to relate them to you, rather than to any other person, being persuaded that it is in you to remedy all misfortunes. Then discoursed he the whole circumstance of the matter. Palmerin told him to bring him presently to the place; he being grievously passionate, as well for the mishap which had befallen his brother, as also for the interruption of his journey to Constantinople, to which place his earnest affection called him: in this troubled state of mind, he followed the squire, using as speedy diligence as might be, for fear of what might happen to his brother; and they arrived on the next day about even tide, in sight of the castle, and entered the valley through which the river ran. This, sir, said the squire, is the unlucky place where I lost the knight of the Savage Man, my noble master. Cursed, quoth he

of the Tyger, may they be that were th
inventors of enchantments, which have
the overthrow of many a good and
knight, and have made wretches and co
to triumph in their misfortune.

Then they came down to the river,
they could find neither boat nor boa
So they went along by the river-sid
they came to a place where the
parted into two channels, which pre
joined again, leaving an islet in the
As he of the Tyger was about to tr
ford, a knight called out to him fro
other side, who wore over his armour
of wild beasts which he had slain, a
hunting sword suspended by a belt
same. Sir Palmerin, said he, do not th
passing here, the water is deep an
bottom strong. Proceed higher up the
and I will shew you a better ford.
this Palmerin stayed his horse, to
what he should do; but noting the l
well, he perceived that it was his b
Daliarte. Then, not acquainting the s
with this, he dismissed Florian's, wh

no longer necessary, and whose presence was a restraint upon him, bidding him go to the emperor's court, and wait there, where he should sooner hear tidings of his master than in any other place.

The squire would have gladly kept him company, but he would in no wise suffer him; so he went his way, and he of the Tyger went up the valley, till in a small time he came to a place where the river spread itself widely over the shore, and he of the Skins called out to him to cross, for he would find no better ford. And though that was the safest place of passage, yet the horses were sometimes fain to swim; but having past the force of the stream, they gained to the other side with little difficulty, and the knight of the Skins offered to take his horse from him of the Tyger, who must needs dismount to dry himself. But he, who would not permit himself to be treated with this courtesy, leapt off, and took him in his arms, saying, Who would have thought, sir brother, in such a time of need, and in so uncertain an

adventure, to find so good a guide! do I lose all fear, not thinking that F my brother can run any risk in this seeing you are here. Sir, answered Da though your heart teaches you to make account of danger, this is not one of things which are to be lightly accounte the knight of the Savage Man is in grea certain peril of his life, and his preser is full doubtful. I have been so unluc this business, that when I arrived her was already carried away by the stra adventure in the world; and as by m I attained to the knowledge of all, and t by knew that his squire would bring yc this castle, I chose to wait for you, be without me you could have had no inf tion concerning him. Then he said, three or four days ago, when he was s ing his books, it came into his mind tc for news of him and of the knight o Savage, and how he had discovered th old man had beguiled that knight fro emperor's court; and with that he him all, even as it had come to pass.

It seems then, quoth the knight of the Tyger, that it is needless to go to the castle, or to make any tarriance here, and that we should make for the Profound Island without delay. But I fear me, the hindrances which are thrown in one's way at such a time as this, and the length of voyage, may give occasion for some evil; and if that should betide, I know not what after-contentment could console me for so great a sorrow. Sir, said Daliarte, this is not a thing which must be left for any adventure which chance could offer; for if the knight of the Savage should be lost, it would be the greatest loss in the world, and a grief which would extend to many. There let us go seek him, without resting, you by one way, I by another; and he who arrives first venture his life for him, that by one danger we may save another. I well knew, replied he of the Tyger, that from so brave a heart and so excellent a judgment as yours, nothing could proceed but encouragement and good counsel for those who stand in need thereof. Let us do as you say. So they travelled along the valley till they came to a place where the

road divided into two, and then they separated, as sorrowful as the mishap of the knight of the Savage made them; for love when it is great, always occasioneth great fear.

CHAPTER 112.

After the knight of the Tyger had parted from the sage Daliarte, he rode on all day and all night, for his trouble would not let him rest; and because his horse at last, what with the weariness of travelling, and the weight of his armour, could go no farther, he took Selviam's, which was in a state to hold out something longer, saying to him, Selviam, my friend, thou seest the fortune to which my life is offered, and as this horse can carry me no longer, I beseech thee go unto the nearest port of the sea thou canst find, and there take shipping to the Profound Isle, which in times past belonged to the giant Bravorante, father to Calfurnio, and there thou wilt find news of me, if the weather doth

though in losing my life my sorrows
have their end; yet would that be
to me, for my true contentment consi
no other thing than in the remem
that I endured them for her sake; an
that thought I was able to put to fli
fears which love or occasion presen
me. But now, if death should depr
of that good which I enjoy in life, I
not what consolation it would leave. I
bear with me the recollection of the
rows with the which I was contente
endure worse in thinking that I ha
them. Howbeit, if in the other wo
retain the remembrance of what we
left in this, I will support myself till
see her there; for my soul can enjoy n

to be allowed. Now because my heart presageth greater perils in this journey than I have ever yet gone through, and I know not how it may please fortune to dispose of me, I beseech thee, if this should be my end, serve thou my lady from that time forth, with the same faith and love wherewith thou hast alway served me, and expect from her the guerdon which I cannot give thee, and the thought whereof troubles me; for affection so loyal, and faith so tried and proved, and services of such long time, ought not to be recompensed by leaving thee only my wishes for thy requital. It cannot however be but that she should bestow favours and honours upon thee, remembering what she owes to me, and what I owe unto you. Even if it should be otherwise, do not repine at doing my will till you see that she marries, and another enjoys the meed of my labours, the thought which of all others makes me resent death the most.

These words brought with them tears, in testimony of what he felt; and though none of his secret thoughts were hidden from Sel-

viam, yet he would fain not have betrayed such weakness at a time when he had need of all his courage; and therefore setting spurs to the horse, he departed without waiting for reply. But Selviam seeing him thus depart, and remembering whither he went, and how little he would regard any thing in the world for the preservation of his brother, and how doubtful that was, his heart was so overpowered with sorrow, that he fell senseless upon the ground. After a while, when that passion had abated, recovering, he began his way; and as the weakness of his horse made it slow travelling, being almost in despair of effecting the journey, he alighted and took the reins, to lead him and give him some relief. He had not proceeded far, before he saw two knights come across from the left, whom he knew by their arms to be Beroldo and Platir, and called out to them to wait for him. They presently knew him, and seeing him in that plight, and bathed in tears, asked him in fear, what the cause might be: then he discovered to them what had befallen the knight of the Savage, and how he of the Tyger was gone to give him succour;

but according to what was known of the land, if he arrived there alone it would be a miracle if he escaped. Selviam, replied Platir, the good fortune of your lord is so accustomed to atchieve the impossible, that I do not think he will fail here: we have seen things, whereof other men have despaired, appear trifling in his hands. I always thought ill of the adventure on which the knight of the Savage left the court; but the fear which I entertained for his life is gone, now that I know who is gone to succour him. Nevertheless we will follow him to see the end, for if any mishap should befall, it would not be well that any one should be without his part therein. Come you on as well as you can, and embark as soon as you can, as we will all do. With these words they both took leave of him, and rode on faster than when he met them.

Now the history saith, that the knight of the Tyger, after he departed from Selviam, made such dispatch of way, as at length he came to a little town by the sea coast, where he freighted a Venetian galley, which had been

waiting for freight some days; and I
got on board with nothing but his
took his way to the island of Cola
which was much famed abroad, by rea
the giants who formerly possessed the
for no vessel whatsoever might take la
there during the time these giants live
only because their lives would have b
danger, but also because the duties
they levied were insupportable. N
there was but little wind, this being t
ginning of summer, they rowed along
but on the third day the wind arose s
treme and violent, that in the midst of
ter it could not be more rigorous; s
they were driven to take shelter in a
where divers other ships, being gl
avoid the troublesome tempest, had
anchor; in one of these ships was the
Daliarte, who had been driven in t

all at the same time reach the island of Colambar. This reasoning somewhat comforted the knight of the Tyger. The tempest endured all that day; on the next it was clean abated, and he left the galley, contenting the master thereof for his pains, and freighted one of those ships which were in the haven: but he would not go in the same with Daliarte. At this time Platir and Berold arrived, being on the same adventure; and they perceiving that the knight of the Tyger would have none in his company, embarked themselves with Daliarte, and setting forth of the haven together, they kept company within sight of one another until the dark night did separate them.

Now inasmuch as they and their adventures will be spoken of in due time, the history returneth to the knight of the Savage Man, who was carried away, as ye have heard, by Arlanza, the damsel giantess. She and her company sailed with a speedy pace on the sea, and with such pleasure as the good success of their adventure might occasion. In four days and four nights, being so

favoured of the wind and weather, they came within the sight of the island. But then, as the good fortune of the knight of the Savage would have it, he being reserved for great things, the weather was changed suddenly with a mighty tempest, and many times they were all in doubt to be cast away; and in few days they were cast so far from the island, as the pilot could not judge into what country the wind had driven them, both he and the mariners being so overpowered by fear, that they knew not how to remedy themselves. So they drove along under bare poles, rather holding their death for certain than having any hope of life. Arlanza, who was in the cabin with her damsels, was in such state that she could not direct them; nor was there in the whole ship one person who could encourage the rest, except it were Alfernao. He, who by reason of his great age and discretion had experience of many things, went wherever his presence was most required; now to encourage the pilot to exert his skill, and now urging the mariners to bestir themselves; but all was in vain, for their hearts

lid so faint, seeing so great trouble and danger towards them, that the aid which they should have given to remedy it was not of any account at all; and their understanding did forsake them so amazedly, as they knew no way to help the perils extant before their eyes.

Alfernao seeing them so out of heart, came to Arlanza, and said, Take heart, lady, for all our lives are in you. This fortune is a thing of every day, and as it came suddenly, so it will soon pass. I pray you come forth of your cabin, to the end the pilot and the mariners may behold you; for in seeing you they will receive a fresh encouragement, and labour as they ought to do.

In this order Alfernao did endeavour himself to do all things that could be done; and Arlanza seeing that what he said was good, wiping away her tears, would have dissembled her fear, and gone forth; but when she beheld the furiousness of the waves sometime lifting the ship up as it were to heaven, and then throwing it down to the

not able to sustain herself, she seated h
upon some cushions, near her damsels,
were bewailing their approaching death:
she said, O, Alfernao, how soon dc
deeds receive their reward! This storm
arisen only because of our deserts; and
lieve certainly, that the divine powers a
termined to punish us for the great i
and disloyalty we offer, in seeking the
of this knight, who, though he slew
brethren, did only his devoir, slaying
fairly one after another in plain fight
which in truth I do not believe tha
strength would have sufficed, if the god
not so willed it to punish their exce
cruelty and tyranny. And we being fc
ful to sift the justness of the cause, go

bound him, and when he is in his natural senses, let the gods determine both concerning him and us, according to their pleasure.

So rising with this determination before her words were well ended, she ordered the door of the cabin to be opened wherein the knight of the Savage lay, little weening the peril in which his life then stood; and taking the ring off his finger, he awoke, and finding himself in a ship on the sea, surrounded with women, and with lamentations on all sides, astonished at seeing himself in such a place, he went out. And when he saw how the furious waves of the water did toss and turmoil their bark, and how the pilot, the mariners, and every one in the ship, their hearts were dead, because they knew no way how to help themselves, he began with noble words to cheer and encourage them, and then to drive them on with threats. Much was he abashed to see himself in such a place, where it was the least part of his thoughts to have come, and how he came so embarked from the castle, where the damsels came and entertained him so exceeding friendly at the

gate. This strange adventure made him demand how, and after what sort, he chanced thither; but the danger which he saw imminent before his eyes, would not afford him so much leisure, but compelled him to settle his thoughts on that which was more necessary. Then he continued urging them on all day, and when night came, the storm seemed somewhat to abate, and they began to take courage. He of the Savage then repared to Arlanza's cabin, and seeing her still overcome with fear, seated himself by her, and said, Fear not, lady, these little disasters, but leave fear for him who is conquered by your beauty, and who has therefore need to fear. The storm becomes less and less; dry then your tears, such eyes as yours ought not to be dimmed by them: that others should weep for you were just, but that you should weep for any thing, is what I cannot consent to.

Arlanza did not take her eyes from him all the while he was speaking; and though she well knew that her beauty was not worthy of such commendations, yet was she de-

lighted with this flattery, as is the nature of women. Seeing too how fair a man he was, and how he sought to comfort her, and remembering at the same time how she had deceived him, and to what end, the death of her brethren had not such power over her, but that hatred was converted into love. The knight of the Savage perceived this by her looks and other symptoms, whereat Alfernao became desperate, thinking now that his whole practice was defeated.

The night being spent, at the break of day the tempest calmed, the morning became clear, and the pilot gave them to understand they were on the coast of Spain, which greatly displeased Alfernao. As the day brightened, they found themselves in sight of the city of Malaga, which in those days belonged to the Moors. Then he of the Savage, taking Arlanza by the hand, led her out of the cabin, and took her upon the forecastle to shew her the land. And when they were seated there, he besought her that she would tell him why he had been put on board that ship without knowing it, and how

it was that he had remained so many days without recollection, which he had not asked before for fear of displeasing her.

Sir, quoth she, since my fate will so have it that I can be no longer your enemy, I will tell you the truth of what you ask, for love hath brought me into such estate, that I cannot conceal it. Then she recounted to him who she was, and the whole as it had happened. Certes, lady, he replied, the desire I felt to do you service, did not deserve this guerdon; but I hold it now still better employed, since after having run such extreme peril, I have your good will on my side to acknowledge my deservings. Nevertheless, though this be the case, I know not how I can sleep in security, having Alfernao here who came so far to beguile me so craftily and your knights who are at his obedience What have I to expect, but that they will endeavour to destroy me, for your mother's satisfaction. What then I beseech of you is, that you give me leave to arm myself, and dispose of them as I think good; and for what respect yourself, be sure, that while I

life lasts I shall always acknowledge what I owe to you, that I may requite it and serve you in whatever is most to your honour and pleasure. Sir, she replied, when I disclosed this deceit to you, it was with no other determination than that of being wholly at your disposal. In recompense whereof I pray you remember, that I lose my mother, my patrimony, and above all, am exposed to the common bruit of ill report, that I sold the blood of my brethren, placing my affections upon him who slew them, and who, peradventure, hath placed his elsewhere. Lady mine, said he of the Savage, do not think that in this you have lost any thing; the loss of your mother cannot be called a loss, considering what her works are. Of the patrimony which you should inherit from your father, none shall disinherit you, for if I live, you shall enjoy this and greater than this; and as time must prove the truth of this, I will not say any farther.

While they were thus talking he heard a stir in the ship; and leaving her, went into his cabin. Arlanza followed to help to arm him, and ere he had girded on his mail coat, Al-

fernao, with four armed knights, the door; for seeing him in talk lady, and fearing what it might be, mined to lay hands on him while h armed, doubting that afterwards not be able to do it. He of the Sa forth, saying, The time is now come wherein thy traitorous dealings sha thily recompenced.

When lifting up his sword to ha him, the others stepped before and him; but as in that hour the knight vage was full of wrath, and with g he gave no stroke but did its busine in short time two were laid at his others seeing that in flight there safety, and despairing of obtaini from the conqueror, placed all the their own strength, converting de courage, fighting valiantly, and that if they did not by main might the salvation of their lives, all oth was hopeless. But the might of l Savage was so much beyond tha men, that it soon demolished that

having written in his memory, and present as it were before his eyes, the words and tears with which Alfernao had beguiled him, and the damnable intention with the which he had been led away, he longed to give him his reward. This made him press them so close that he lopt off the arm of one hard by the shoulder, and the fourth, for fear, leapt into the sea, and there was drowned, by reason of the weight of his armour.

Then Alfernao, seeing his life in so great danger, threw himself at the feet of Arlanza, saying, Lady, if the faith and love with the which I have ever served you and your mother, deserve this recompence, it is well that you afford it me; but if loyalty ought to be recompenced as it hath worthily merited, then I beseech you save me from the fury of this knight, since the same reason which he hath for slaying me, you have for preserving me.

The damsel giantess was so amazed at the prowess of the knight of the Savage, that

she had neither recollection left to ask him any thing, nor to answer Alfernao. But he, seeing him at her feet, and her colour gone, forcing his inclination to content her, said to her with a smile, Alfernao well knew, lady, where he placed his hope when all others had failed him, and since he knew so well, let his discretion save him. Though I trow that one who hath spent all his time in evil deeds, will yet commit some one which will draw upon him payment for all.

Arlanza thanked him well for this, and Alfernao, at her commandment, was put in sure guard, lest he should practice any more treason.

From that time the knight of the Savage treated Arlanza with greater courtesy and love, being sensible of what he owed her, and laying aside the design with which he had eyed her at first; a change greatly to be praised: for being so given as he was to unlawful desires, it was much to be esteemed that he curbed them. And though she had yielded up her affections to him, yet was he

ded to return them not with any short
entment, but with actions worthy of
e which he had received from her, as
l be related hereafter.

CHAPTER 113.

These things being done, it was nec
as there was lack of water in the ship
to land; whereupon the knight of the
not thinking that land safe, commanc
pilot to proceed farther, and the n
they landed in a haven belonging to
dos king of Spain, where they rested
selves certain days, because Arlanza a
damsels were weary of the sea. Here
nao desired leave of him to return in

troubled by your means, and for this trouble there is no remedy till the truth concerning me be known. You must therefore first go to the emperor, to let him understand what hath happened to me, from the time when you led me away until this present; and though your actions and the dread of what you deserve may make you fear to do this, you may go safely, for the emperor's clemency is greater than the crimes of any one. It is moreover sufficient for your security that I send you there, and that it will be known in what I am indebted to the lady Arlanza, by whose merits you have preserved your life, at a time when you little deserved it.

Sir, said Alfernao, liberty is so highly esteemed, and so greatly desired by them who are without it, as sometimes the desire to recover it maketh him who hath it not to put his life in great jeopardy: then seeing himself brought into such mishap, he cometh in such sort to repent himself, as he wisheth rather continual servitude than to recover liberty at such a price.

In this order it fared with me at this ti
who being desirous to live out of the ado
am content to obey your command, yet u
without fear; but such is the hope I have
the emperor's bounty, that I trust I am sa
then taking leave of him, he said to A
lanza, Lady, what will you that I shall say
your mother, if it should ever be my fortu
to appear before her?

Give her to understand, she replied, that
she will have me to be her daughter, sh
must lay aside her hatred to this knight, a
become his friend; for now she can have
revenge for her sons, except by losing h
daughter, so that to pursue this purpo
will be to her greater grief. While I a
uncertain concerning this, she must not e
pect to see me, but I shall obey the co
mand of the knight of the Savage M
Greatly should I esteem it if he wo
place me in the house of the emperor
grandfather, that I might obtain the frien
ship of the many and great princesses w
are therein, and also think that I am th
cleared of the hatred in which I was m

up. I rejoice, answered he of the Savage Man, to see you in this mind, and shall fulfil your wish, if fortune does not prevent me. You, Alfernao, for love of me, report to the emperor in what good mind thou didst leave the lady Arlanza, and advise him and the empress to hold themselves ready to be her sponsors, and to look out a husband for her against the day of her baptism, such a one as may be according to her deserts and my expectations.

Alfernao promised to fulfil his will and commandment, and so took his leave of them, for his heart could not bear to remain there longer. The knight of the Savage Man sojourned there while he provided him of arms, and then dismissed the pilot and mariners, because he intended to travel through the country at leisure, and shew the things thereof to Arlanza and her damsels.

When all things were in readiness, he set forward with his fair company, and the first day, somewhat towards the evening, they arrived within a fair and goodly valley, full

the fountain, under the shade of so
poplars. Methinks, sir, said Arlanz
der ladies pass their time with greate
sure than my fortune hath allotted m
have fixed my good-will upon one tha
placed his elsewhere. He of the
made semblance as if he had not und
her, and talking of other things the
near the tents, which were marvellou
One of the damsels then came up t
saying, It seems a strange thing, sir
that one man should take upon him
duct five damsels. I will give you a
of advice, if you will take it, to relie
of this great charge. Even though i
bad advice, replied he, it would not
so, coming from you. I beseech you

whom; if you please, you may try the joust, and which of them shall hap to be vanished, shall deliver you his lady; so that if you overthrow them all, you shall have us all four; and nine, you know, will be little more trouble than five. If, on the contrary, they should conquer you, you shall give them each a damsel, and thus you will lose four of your five, and still remain with one; so that which ever way it may fall out, you must be a gainer.

You have so much grace, replied he of the Savage, that to gain you I would jeopard the adventure to lose myself; and time seems too long, till I have won you. See that this confidence do not deceive you, she answered: though I know you so much wish to lose your company, that you would gladly compound for defeat to be rid of them.

At this a dwarf from the top of one of the poplars began to sound a trumpet, which he did with so high a note, as it brought a gallant echo from the whole valley: presently he of the Savage espied four knights come

squires brought after them, were pou
silver swans in a field vert. When th
come to the tents, the damsel rehear
them what had passed: whereupon
them answered her: Any thing, lady
be adventured to please you; but wo
have any one risk the loss of you
nothing is to be gained? To lose m
you, and to lose the whole world
would be but just; but to lose you
thing ought not to be required, espe
you have not proposed a fair excha
yourself. If, replied she, you wish
cuse yourself from the danger with
it is well that my terms be broken
this be not the case, look how mu
wonder ladies are beholden to their

ose them; and therefore he ventures upon he chance, because he has so little to lose and so much to gain.

It seems, cried he of the Savage, that you do not well know me. These which I have I shall keep, and those which you have I shall take. And the worse you defend them the less shall I be pleased, for I am not contented with what costs little. Since you will have it so, said the knight, look to yourself, and I will shew you your mistake.

With these words he clapt down the beaver of his helmet, and having couched his lance, he fetched his course against the knight of the Savage Man, who welcomed him as he came; the knight brake his lance, he of the Savage past on without being in the slightest manner displaced; but his encounter was given with such force, that the other went to the ground, little pleased with what had befallen him, being so greatly amazed with his fall, that he lay without moving hand or foot. Methinks, quoth he of the Savage to the damsel with whom he had made the condi-

to deny you your prize, and since
hath fallen on me, whom this knig
prized to defend, account me from
yours—I had far rather be his who
well how to gain me, than his wh
defend me so ill.

By this time one of the others crie
to prepare himself, and as his spear
whole from the first encounter, he e
it again in this to such effect, that th
knight was sent to the ground, an
his legs breaking at the ancle, he wa
to rise.

The other two knights, seeing hov
[illegible] turned out, and doubting they

could not pierce his arms. He perceiving his horse was weak, leapt off, and drawing his sword awaited them, saying, Methinks, sirs, you do all you can to save yourselves; but use whatever baseness you will, the damsels will go with me at last, and you will remain with the sorrow of having lost them. I wish you may lose nothing more!—I know not how that may be, quoth one of them; but this I know, that before you win them, they shall cost you so much that you shall remember them as long as you live, and pay for the evil you have done. And then they alighted and came against him, and began to lay on on all sides. He of the Savage, who thought little of this danger, as one who had gone through greater, received them with such rigorous blows, that one of them was soon brought to the ground, and the other seeing his life in such straits, thought rather of saving himself, than of offending his enemy. But now the knight who had first ousted, and had lain stunned thus long, arose, and seeing such havock made among his companions, and the danger in which this last stood, went to his help. He of the Sa-

you have not more such succour, tha
be better pleased with my victory, a
ladies see how ill they were bestow
had scarcely finished his words, b
of them fell at his feet with pure v
and the other ran to the damsels, be
them to save him. Good cover
taken, quoth he of the Savage, an
you; for certes you would else h
for the baseness which you hav
You, ladies, mount your palfreys, fo
fain be gone, lest the love of these
the remembrance of how much y
them, should make you refuse to c
me. They who could so ill defen
plied one, will hardly be rememb
cept to be abhorred. We are y
being so will do your pleasure; do

Lady, answered the knight of the Savage Man, I am not so accustomed to use discourtesy to women that I should do so by you. Win your will, and the wills of all of ye is what I would fain do, and will do you a thousand services to win it. If I fail, the fault is my own. Then mounting them, he took from the horses of the vanquished knights that which seemed the best, and gave his shield to one of the squires; for every damsel had her squire. The tents he left to the four wounded knights, as some satisfaction for their loss.

CHAPTER 114.

After the knight of the Savage Man had left the valley where he vanquished the four knights, he began his journey through the realm of Spain, being well pleased with his new company, though he felt it some trouble to render due compliments to each of them. His aim was above all the rest, to show most honour and respect to Arlanza, the damsel giantess, bearing in memory what he owed her; and for this reason, though he had wicked intentions upon the rest, she was not thus aimed at. They had not ridden far before, being heated with exercise and with the weather, he took off his helmet and gave it to one of the squires; when the damsels beholding his fair visage,

and how youthful and comely he was withal, as well as of so great prowess, began to feel new thoughts toward him, far other than what they had first conceived. His eyes and words were equally directed to them all, that he might lose none of them; for they are so jealous in these things that any thing offends them, and he was so avaricious that he feared every thing. Among other things, he asked them of whence they were, and wherefore they had been in the company of those knights. One of them replied, Sir, since we are to do your will in all things, we will tell you. These ladies are named Armelia, Julianda, Sabelia, and myself am called Artisia, all of one city, called Arjeda, which is here hard by. Those four knights, whereof two were brethren, and so were the other twain, yet being so allied together as they were all cousins one to another, did us service, with intent to marry us; and because they knew that by the licence of our mother, we came oftentimes to recreate ourselves by that fountain, there they came to feed our eyes with such pleasant gests as they could daily attempt in the forest; and that we might

be better persuaded of their loves, they would offer the joust to any knight that passed through the valley, summoning them thereto by the dwarf which sounded the trumpet; this they did oftentimes, and were always the conquerors, until their fortune failed them upon your coming, and we were unlucky enough to propose conditions which have made us lose them, and also the liberty of returning to our own homes.

Ladies, answered the knight of the Savage Man, he who hath so fair a show of his victory, ought on no account to lose it. I well remember that I may take you with me, but that I should leave you behind, that is not to be thought of. I must wait till some one conquers me and wins you from me, though he who is already vanquished by you, will hardly be vanquished by any other. Now that I am in this country, I will shew you the castle of Almourol, and the court of Spain, and then any one that is tired of my company, may depart at her own pleasure.

All the damsels upon this thanked him, and

besought him to do as he had promised; for it is the nature of women to desire to see novelties, and go pilgrimages. Arlanza, though she also desired the same, was sorry that it should be with this company; for her love was great, and she would fain not have had it impeded.

Thus they journeyed till night came upon them; then they went to a castle near hand, where they were entertained. Here leave we him and them together, and proceed to tell how the knight of the Tyger, the fifth day after he was embarked, came within sight of the Profound Isle: the pilot knew the land, and he gave thanks to God for so fair a beginning. Then taking the first port they found, he disembarked his horse, armed himself, and advanced alone into the island, which seemed to him pleasant and fertile: He had not gone far before night overtook him, in a place where he knew not where he should look to find lodging; and being wearied with crossing a mountain, he alighted, and took the bridle off his horse to let him graze. And here he missed Selviam, who

than all others. So finding himsel
and in this lonely place, he was fai
down upon the grass, using his helm
pillow under his head; and there he
the night, busied with careful thoug
which he supt and sustained himself
morning came, earlier to his seemir
it was wont; for they who pass the
imaginations after their own liking
think it shorter than it is. But then
to mind for what he was come into th
he arose and laced on his helmet, an
his shield about his neck, and mount
horseback pursued his way; and he m
that so rare a country should be
peopled. About the evening, he cam
was a little town that was compasse

seeing him without a squire attending on him, came and took his horse himself, and afterward helped to unarm him, using him with so great humanity as was possible.

Here he rested for the remainder of the day, and here he determined to pass the night, that he might inform himself from his host concerning the things of that country. So when they were at supper, and conversing upon such matters as occurred, he requested his host to tell him to whom that island belonged, and what there was therein, that he might report it in other places where he came; to which demand, the ancient knight his host made this answer:

You came in good time, sir, to be resolved of that; if it had been your fortune to come hither a little sooner, your youth would have been in its last extremity of life. For you shall understand, that in time past a giant named Bravorante, cruel, and full of malice and treachery, was lord and possessor of this island, and he was wont to set spies at all his ports, to inform him when any knights or

damsels did arrive, and when any such happened to come, he would use his cruelty; the knights he would deprive of their lives, and the damsels he would villainously force, and by their spoil made himself rich. And all the sweat and labour of his vassals was expended for his profit only. And when any merchants, by fortune, came to cast anchor in this isle, he would compel them to pay unreasonable duties: but if they refused to pay these imposts, which they knew to be laid on them without all right or reason, then would he make them ransom their lives and persons at a price imposed by his will and pleasure. In fine, he was cruel and tyrannous above all men that ever were born. At length it was his lot to die in this wickedness, that in the other life he might receive the reward of it. He thus dying left behind him four sons which he had to issue, who were in all things like their father the two eldest were named Calfurnio and Camboldam, who being not content to live in so small a land, went to inhabit another country, where the gods not suffering their tyranny, they were slain by the hand

f one only knight, who was called the night of the Savage Man. We know him ıere by no other name, and he is thus called, for he beareth figured in his shield a Savage Man. It may be you have better knowledge of him, because you roam about the world. The two other brethren, who were younger, were nourished in this island under their mother's wing; and against her will, after they judged themselves able to endure armour, they determined to depart hence, to revenge the deaths of their brethren, Calfurnio and Camboldam. With this purport away they went, doing after the manner of their predecessors. It so fell out that they found him whom they sought, the knight of the Savage Man himself, who slew them both in equal battle, like a brave and doughty knight. It seems that God made him to be the succour of many, and the helper of these people, who so long lived under such tyranny. The mother of these, called Colambar, could not endure he grief she sustained for the death of her hildren, and therefore she practised and ompassed all devices she could, thereby to get

named Alfernao, who is gone to the em
court of Constantinople, it is now sor
since, with good hope to work so cra
well he can, that the knight of the
Man may be brought hither. And l
no occasion shall lack that may h
thing, he hath taken with him a damse
ess named Arlanza, that is daughter
Colambar, and is of young years an
customs, accompanied with a certai
ber of knights and damsels; and ac
to the practice which they have
and the assurance which Colambar
in this Alfernao, it is reported that the
of the Savage Man shall be brougl
And against the day of the sacrifice

this island hath by his cruelty renewed the days of his brother-in-law and his nephew; an evil which appeareth the more unsupportable, inasmuch as for some years the people had begun to live in liberty. God therefore keep you from his hands, for you are young, and any mishap would be ill directed upon you; and God preserve him of the Savage from craft and treason.

Believe me, friend, replied he of the Tyger, the things which God hath appointed no man may avoid. God hath willed that this brother of Colambar, where he hath come thinking to see the vengeance which he deserves, is come to seek the guerdon of his misdeeds. The knight of the Savage Man I know well; God, who hath made him for such great things, will keep him from his enemies. I am glad to know what you have told me, and to-morrow, if my fortune will let me find this giant, I will try myself with him. It may be that God, wearied out with his wickedness, will let him receive such recompence as is meet. You say this, sir knight, replied his host, because you know not what

he is. This giant is so fierce and terrible, that he would not think much of doing battle with ten knights. To adventure your youth in his hands would not be courage—we might call it by another name.

He thanked him for his counsel, but not as one who accepted it. That night he took his rest more contentedly, seeing that he of the Savage was not yet arrived, and he had come with his succour in good time. Early in the morning he took leave of his host, and departed; and coming into a forest, wherethrough he should travel to the city where Colambar made her abode, he heard upon the left hand the roaring of the sea, and it came into his mind that he would go to the shore, to see if he could espy any vessel, wherein the knight of the Savage Man might be embarked; but as he rode that way, he heard a great noise of arms, and pushing on came to the water's edge. There he espied a ship lying at anchor, and hard by it ten knights maintaining a fierce combat against three, whom he knew to be Platir, Berold, and Daliarte, whereat he received fresh con-

entment, remembering that they were come o succour his brother. About twenty paces rom them was a giant, of bigness out of all measure, covered with plates of black steel, which were of great strength. He carried a huge and heavy shield, which was bound with hoops of steel, exceeding strong; and bore in a field sable, some dark and gloomy trees. He rode a mulberry-coloured horse, and leant upon his spear, the hilt whereof rested on the ground; being withal so fierce and terrible, that the bare sight dismayed all who beheld him. He of the Tyger fixed his eyes upon him, and saw how, being in great wrath, he called to the ten knights to lay on and kill the others, for he should be loth to employ his person in so trifling an adventure. But the three good knights, seeing what worse business they had before them when they should have conquered these, did wonders. And truly the others were as much sustained by the presence of the giant, as by their own force. Nevertheless, as their strength and skill were different from those of their enemies, they began to wax faint, and fall for loss of blood, or for fear.

The giant seeing this, began to right himself in the saddle, meaning to go help them, and satisfy his anger. He of the Tyger, who till now had remained beholding the prowess of his friends, which was well worthy to be seen, when he saw the giant preparing himself, went before him, fearing that his coming up might be hurtful, and said, Why wouldst thou, Pavoroso, put out thy strength against men who are so wearied that they cannot resist thee? Let them alone, and address thyself to me, that as thy mortal enemy come to seek thee, and deliver this isle out of thy cruel and bloody tyranny. The giant stayed awhile to behold him that summoned him to the combat in such brave manner; and perceiving that he bare a golden Tyger in his shield, which the world held in such great estimation, he thought that the knight had not thus defied him without great confidence in his own deeds: and seeing that his people were now utterly overthrown, and they who had escaped were flying for their lives, he raised his voice and said, I see well that you are far different in valour from them of *this* country, and therefore rejoice to find

something worthy to employ my strength. But I beseech thee tell me, if peradventure thou art of the house of the emperor Palmerin, or if either of you be of the lineage of Don Duardos, or of his sons; that would full well content me, nor can I believe that men of such great boldness can be of any other stock. Give me *albracias**, quoth he of the Tyger, for if you greatly desire to meet with these men, here you have them. We are all of that house. I am the son of Don Duardos, and brother to the knight of the Savage Man, and I will requite thee for the treason ye here have devised against him.

Art thou Palmerin, cried the giant, the eldest son to prince Don Duardos, that vanquished Dramuziando and slewest Camboldam, and didst win the Hidden Island, conquering all them that kept the same?

Why dost thou ask, said he? Marry, for that I greatly desire, said the giant, to enter the combat with thee, in the presence of my

* The reward for bringing good news.

sister Colambar, and to give her some pleasure, in recompence for all the evil which she hath received from thy race. I am he, replied he of the Tyger, and I am right glad that thou wilt have this battle performed there, that it may be seen in public how God chastiseth thy sins. Well then, said the giant, since it pleasure thee, wait till to-morrow, for it is now late, and mean-while will cause the field to be provided: and if those thy companions would be likewise set to work, I have three nephews, that shall maintain the combat against them; but I fear they will excuse themselves with the labour they have gone through to-day, and with pleading that their armour is broken; as for that, however, I will furnish them out of the armoury of my brother-in-law Bravorante, with suits enough, from which they may chuse. We stand in need of them, replied Berolde, and will take them, that we may not reject thy courtesy; but though we should have had them not, we would have accepted the combat, as well to accompany and do service to sir Palmerin, as to finish the rooting out of all your breed. In

ruth, said he of the Tyger, I would fain that our battle should be ended first; there will be time enow for this, if you think good; if not, let it be as you will. Sir Palmerin, cried Platir and Daliarte, do not do us this wrong. Remember, if you vanquish Pavoroso, his nephews will not enter the field next day, for fear. Consent therefore to what the giant proposes, in which you shall do us a great pleasure, and all the praise and honour will be yours at last.

Seeing it is your earnest desire, said the knight of the Tyger, let it be so. The giant went away as joyful as might be, for he promised himself the victory before the knight of the Savage Man arrived; and in this joy he came to his sister, who was full sorrowful because her knights were vanquished, as also for the long tarriance of her daughter, fearing some mischance, as her heart foreboded. Howbeit, with the coming of her brother she was something comforted, and he began to make ready for the following day. He of the Tyger remained with his friends, and asked of them

in what manner that battle had chanced. Sir, said Daliarte, as this giant hath spun all over the island, a ship no sooner comes to, than out they rush to see who may be in it; which it seems did not happen to you, because they could not be in all places. We arrived here just at day-break, and we had not finished landing our horses, when we were assaulted by these knights; and he came himself to encourage and animate them against us. We might have been in danger had you not so happily arrived; and since God will have it so, in like manner will he have it all come to happy end: for now it cannot be otherwise, seeing that the knight of the Savage hath not arrived before us.

In this contentment they sent for food from the ship, and dressed a little wound which Beroldo had received on his arm: for that cause Palmerin besought him that he would not adventure the combat the next day, but he would by no means be persuaded.

Daliarte's squire took his horse from him

of the Tyger, and they passed all that day upon the shore, looking out if any ship should appear, that they might be as quick at her landing as the enemy. When it grew dark they went on board, for they did not hold themselves secure ashore; and remembered that it was folly to trust in the faith of the faithless.

CHAPTER 115.

The morning being come, which was the day of the battle, the four knights left the ship, being armed at all points, in armour which was somewhat broken: so leaving the ship in the custody of the mariners, they rode on accompanied with their squires, who bare their lances and their shields, slowly towards the town, which was about a half league distant. Being come thither, they beheld at the foot of some great and noble dwellings, a large place, which was spacious and level, and surrounded on all sides with scaffolding, whereon was assembled an innumerable company of people to see the combat, for that they judged it would be the most famous that ever was fought in that country. And they were all well contented, and heartily wished that it might

end in the giant's destruction, though none durst make manifest this wish; for thus it is, that they who rule by fear are flattered openly and abhorred in secret.

The four companions saw that this was the place of battle, and stopt in the midst of it. And now a black carpet was spread at a window of the house, and the giant came thither, leading his sister Colambar by the hand. He had on the same arms which he wore yesterday; his head was unarmed, and albeit he were young, his face was so stern, and his looks so ferocious and terrible, as was sufficient to terrify the hearts of them that were not accustomed to see such a hideous proportion. And though beside this he was out of all measure huge, yet had he little the advantage of Colambar, who in the bigness of her limbs and size of her body, was well nigh equal to him, but by reason of her age had more wrinkles in her face, which was ugly and black, and lowering; her eyes always seemed bloody, and her lips were thick and rolled back, so that her teeth were seen. The giant made her take her seat, and with

his hand pointed out to her the knight of the Tyger, desiring her to take some comfort for the death of her sons, from the vengeance which he would now give her upon this enemy, wherewith she might content herself till their chief destroyer was arrived. In the mean time, there came an esquire of his and ten serving men with him laden with armour, into the place where the combat should be fought; and coming before the four companions, the squire presented the armour to them, saying, The giant saith he cannot be content to conquer knights who would afterwards excuse themselves that their misfortune was for want of armour; and therefore he hath sent you here choice of armour, that you may take them that you shall think most convenient for you. He bids you moreover take counsel, and consider whether you think it better to yield to his sister's mercy, or to abide the rigour of his hands and his nephews'. In my mind, said Platir to his companions, it would not be well to accept arms from him, even though we were without any; for it would be better to die for lack of them, than to conquer

hrough any assistance which he vouchsafed us; especially as ours are not so much spoiled but we may very well endure the trial of this combat: my opinion therefore is, that we should fight in our own; for in this quarrel our good cause is sufficient to give us the victory. I am of this mind also, said Beroldo. Since you think so, quoth Daliarte, let the giant's messenger return, and tell him this resolution, and that he may come, for he is wanted in the lists. A wise counsel you have taken, said the squire; for it being certain that you must be conquered, it will be with the less dishonour. That, certainly, replied Platir, you and yours who wish it, may have; but we have other hope.

With this bidding he went to the giant, who being enraged at the contempt with which they treated him, and the confidence they displayed, his limbs shook for very anger, and black smoke came from his nostrils, and his voice was hoarse and terrible. So taking leave of his sister, he said, I beseech you do not go from the window while the battle lasts, which will not be long, for I shall have no

pleasure in the victory if I do not see that you enjoy it. And then lacing on his helmet, he went to his nephews, who were waiting for him; they were armed in black armour, conformable to their grief and sorrow, and in their shields, in remembrance of Bracolan and Baleato, their cousins, they bore dead bodies in a field sable, being minded never to change their devices until they had seen them revenged. With them he went into the field, being of such exceeding stature that he overtopt them by head and shoulders. When the people beheld so huge and immeasurable a monster, and his nephews also, huger than all other men, strong and courageous, and having their uncle as well as their own confidence to help them, they lost all hope that the knight of the Tyger and his comrades could win the victory; and in truth, that which is greatly desired is alway greatly doubted. Now quoth the giant, seeing how all eyes were upon him, now I suppose you will think it better to yield than to endure the battle. But this wisdom is too late: pray to fortune therefore to help you; though

know not what she can do in your favour against me.

Thou art so proud, quoth he of the Tyger, of the wonder which thou excitest among these weak people, that it makes thee despise those who have no fear, and who will pull down this pride. Let us do our battle; the end will be according to the deserts of each. Since thou dost not acknowledge the favour I did thee, cried Pavoroso, in giving thee a little longer space of life, look to thyself. And then he couched his lance, and he and his nephews, with all the force and fury which their horses could carry, ran their career with such a thundering sound, as if the earth would have opened beneath them. The four companions met them in their might, and all the attaints hit on both sides. The giant broke his lance on the knight of the Tyger's shield, and pierced it through and through, and with such force, that it made him lose both stirrups, and catch hold on the neck of his horse; but presently he righted himself, and the encounter which he had given in exchange

was so well delivered, that piercing through both shield and armour, it brought the giant to the ground, with the saddle between his legs, and a wound upon the left breast, from which much blood issued. But this he did not feel, for melancholy at seeing himself dismounted by a single knight.

The other six were all dismounted, except Flatir, who kept his saddle still; yet was the charge so rough, that he had almost borne his fellows company, having lost both his stirrups. Nor was this to be wondered at, for the doughtiness of the giant's nephews was extreme, and they held their fall to be the greatest shame they had ever received, being so little accustomed to be thrown. He of the Tyger seeing the giant on the ground, alighted lest he should kill his horse, saying, Foul thing, come away from thy nephews, and look to thyself. Thou shalt now see how like I am to ask mercy! I see well, said the giant, that thy good fortune in the encounter makes thee so bold to speak thus bravely; but I have thee here in this place, where, at mine own pleasure, I shall take satisfaction of thy

blood, hewing away thy flesh with the edge of my sword. Then drawing forth a huge and keen cutlass, Behold, he cried, the true vengeance for the death of my nephews! and grasping it in his hand, he delivered such a blow with his whole force, that had not the knight deliverly avoided it, the giant might have satisfied his wrath with that single stroke. It fell upon his shield, just by the upper handle, and split it clean through, so that half fell to the ground, and the other half remained upon his arm; whereat he of the Tyger was dismayed, thinking that if a second blow reached him fairly, he should never feel a third. From thenceforth, therefore, putting all his hope in wariness and activity, he began his battle, avoiding the giant's strokes, and putting in his own at good occasion, so that he gave him many wounds, though slight; for the strength of his arms would not let them be greater. That however in his breast was a great wound, and bled a stream; and with the melancholy which he resented at finding his own strength frustrated, and the vantage of his enemy, he snorted out such

a mass of smoke through the vizor of his helmet, that it well nigh congealed the air. He of the Tyger shifted continually, and led him from place to place, to weary him out. And now the giant sought as far as seemed him to draw back, and the knight of the Tyger was not sorry thereat, for he desired to see how his companions sped; and he saw that the giant's nephews were brought to such plight, that they tried more to save themselves than to hurt their enemies; and they on the other hand were as fresh and active, as strong and as nimble, as though they had but just begun their battle. Platir had handled his man the best, for it was he who this day most especially signalized himself. The giant beholding them in such danger, and himself to have lost a great part of his blood, and such a puissant enemy before him, his heart began to faint, and he returned to the battle with less pride than before, and he of the Tyger perceiving his weakness, now prest him closer: meantime, the knight that fought against Platir, was so faint and feeble, that he fell down to the ground

before him ; then Platir taking his helmet from him, struck off his head, and shewed it to Colambar.

When she saw that fortune was thus fully went against her, she went from the window, nd laying hands upon her hair, began loudly o lament the death of her brother, as well as f her sons; whereat, the giant resented reat pain, thinking that his sister held his eath so certain, that she would not wait to ee the issue of the battle. But having great ourage, he determined to try if he could ot take life in exchange for that which he hould lose. With this determination he egan to shew more strength ; but all was of ttle avail, for he of the Tyger, who knew his eakness, and from whence his strength ame, prest on with such blows as made any wounds, and drew from him much lood: whereas those of the giant were of o effect, so deliverly were they avoided. By is time his nephews were at the feet of eir enemies, who cut off their heads with- it mercy, and then looked on to see the d. He of the Tyger was somewhat me-

lancholy at being the last who should finis his day's business, as if the giant had not de served to have longer time bestowed on him Pavoroso, like one desperate and who had n other hope of salvation than from his own hands, did wonders in this extremity. Never theless, as this was only deriving strengt from weakness, the loss and exhaustion o strength increased, till at length he fel upon the ground, and yielded up his soul t the devil.

Then the knight of the Tyger took off hi helmet, to see whether he were alive or dead but when he saw no life left in him, h wiped his sword and put it in the sheath and kneeling down upon the ground, h thanked God for the victory, believing tha without his aid no human strength coul have been sufficient to overcome so great monster.

But now so great an uproar arose among th people, that it seemed as if there were som new danger; it was this—they were so re joiced at their delivery from the great ty

many which they had endured, that with one accord they cried out to beset the house of Colambar, that none of that bloody lineage might be left alive; for except she was likewise dispatched, they feared their former servitude. Presently a dame, who was one of her women, came to the knight of the Tyger, having her hair dishevelled, and fell down before him, saying, I beseech you, sir knight, since you have courage more than enough to conquer your enemies, you will not be found wanting in pity to succour dames and damsels. The people are going to kill my lady Colambar, and there are only three knights who defend her; they entreat you to save her, and let her receive then at your hands what punishment you may think meet.

He of the Tyger, fearing that if they delayed their help would be of no avail, said to his comrades, Sirs, let us succour Colambar in this extremity; the rage of the people does great hurt in little time. So forcing their way through the press, they reached the gate which the knights of Colambar de

fended, one of them being slain, and the oth two ready to yield themselves. The knigh of the Tyger and his companions stood be fore them, and turning their faces to th people, desired them with the best word they could to depart to their houses, an assured them they would not fail to set them in such a sure state of liberty, that they should no longer be molested with such cruel tyranny, as they had been too long a time.

The people conceived such contentment by these words, as they presently departed thence, crying, that the island ought to b given to the knight of the Tyger, for that was his own by right, and they did heartily desire that he would accept them as his vas sals and subjects, and protect them, and no let the tears of Colambar persuade hin to leave her again in possession of it, for sh was worse to be endured than all before he He promised to look to all things which re garded their liberty: so giving them a courte ous farewell, he went into the first hall, whic was large and well wrought, and there h stopt, for the other rooms were full of th

ries and lamentations of Colambar's women, nd she among them, well worthy then of compassion, little as her actions deserved it, her hair all dispersed about her shoulders, hanging her head down to the ground, and making such pitiful lamentation, as her damsels could not chuse but bedew their cheeks with tears, beholding the extreme grief of their lady and mistress; who at this instant remembered the death of her husband, the loss of her sons, and destruction of her house, and the death of her brother, who came only for her sake thither, as well to defend her as also to see the death of the knight of the Savage Man; but now being past all hope to have him, and fearing lest by him, she had likewise lost her daughter Arlanza, of whom she made most high and especial account: all these occasions considered together, compelled her to immoderate mourning.

The knight of the Tyger being by nature compassionate, was divers times offering to comfort her; but, he judging his presence would rather enrage than pacify her, thought it best to let her alone. Her cries

and groans were not like those of other women: for as her speech was naturally deep and coarse, and now hoarse with lamenting, its sound rung over all the arches of the house, so that it might well have been doubted from whence it came. Sir Palmerin, said Platir, if we are guided by your disposition, we shall never have done—Let us dispose of her at once, and secure ourselves from her wiles, for there is nothing else to fear. Sir Platir, replied he of the Tyger, do what you think best, but do not let me interfere, for it is not in my nature to bear to see the face of one so wretched. So they three took counsel together without him, and agreed to send her on board their ship, and carry her to Constantinople, that the emperor might dispose of her as he thought meet. Incontinently they ordered her to be taken, and being in a manner senseless, she was put in a cart, and carried to the port, where they embarked her, and Daliarte remained to guard her, while the others determined what should be done with the island.

CHAPTER 116.

The history reporteth, that Colambar, overcome with exceeding grief and anguish of mind, and worn out with rage, and the violence of her lamentations, fell on the ground in a trance, like one dead. Platir, who desired to see the end of that house, gave orders to take her up in that state; but she was so heavy, that with great labour, and the help of other men, they could scantly bear her down into the court. There they placed her in a cart, which was covered over with an awning, and so she was carried away to the ship, being followed by some of her women on foot, and with their hair loose, who made such woful and bitter lamentations, as it

When they were come to the
conveyed her thereinto, being still
and two of her dames would by
depart from her, but determined t
company till the last; for not even
in this world are without some
them. When she returned to h
ing herself in the ship, and in the
her enemies, her power gone, an
of recovering it, she would have c
into the sea, judging that to be
way to end her sorrows. Berol
and Daliarte, who were in the
her, for the knight of the Tyg
shore, laid hands on her, and en

ont good guard. Daliarte therefore remained in the ship, and Platir and Beroldo went on shore, where they found him of the Tyger surrounded by the people, who came to see him and serve him, as the preserver of their lives and liberties; rejoicing at last, after so many troubles, and so cruel a tyranny, to obtain him for their lord, and thinking this a sufficient repayment for all which they had endured; and scarcely could they believe it possible that so great happiness should be in store for them. He of the Tyger received them with that natural grace and benignity with the which Heaven had gifted him; but in no case would he accept the government of the isle, for that he said it appertained to his brother Florian, he having with greater cost of his blood destroyed its tyrannous rulers; as for himself and his friends, they came hither only to find him.

But if he should refuse this, then peradventure he might accept the state which they would bestow upon him, and meantime would in his name receive their homage, and provide a governor according to their choice;

and he besought them to be contented to become vassals of him, who with his own blood, and at the expence of so many wounds, had purchased them, and would love them as persons who had cost him so dearly.

The principal persons of the island that were there present, made answer, that they were willing to receive him for their lord, and in what manner he pleased would do homage to him, and deliver up the fortresses. Forthwith they assembled together all the commanders thereof, and on the morrow delivered up the keys into his hands. The knight of the Tyger having set all things in due and necessary order, returned them into their hands that had the custody before, until such time as his brother should arrive and dispose of them at his pleasure. In this business he employed that and the following day, being entertained with many devices which the people invented for his contentment, all far different from what his heart desired. And as he was giving orders to guard the treasures of Colambar, which were full great, being the spoils of many, till the knight of the Savage should

dispose of them, he saw Selviam come in, accompanied with the ancient knight who had been his host, at his first arrival in the isle; and who being informed of the victory, lost his former fears. This was a new joy to him of the Tyger, who felt no joy complete while Selviam was absent: for such is the love of those who have been fostered together.

The host humbled himself at his feet, saying, Sir, if you did not receive in my house that courtesy and respect which to so great a person are due, let the sorrow which I feel be my punishment; for to whomsoever your presence comes, it is easy to perceive its worth. He of the Tyger raised him up and embraced him, saying, The honour and courtesy which I received from you in a land where they were forbidden, I well remember, and by how much the more rigorously they were forbidden, so much the more am I bound unto you. And for that at this present I have not wherewith to guerdon you, I pray you to accept the government of this island, the lord thereof I know will be well contented therewithal; and if fortune vouchsafe to

of this ancient knight, hath this peop
any other governor than yourself? Y
replied, my brother, the knight of tl
vage, to whom it doth by greatest ri
pertain. I feared, said Argentao, tha
still remained some of the stock of
rante; but he who desires to serve y
also be well pleased to serve your b
The honour which you bestow upon m
cept: for though I am unworthy of so
a thing, you are not he who should
little ones. Howbeit, I would ha
people of this country satisfied therew
if that be not the case, I will not
those who may despise my governmen

Now as this Argentao was a knight of

yielded obedience to him, thinking it a fit thing that he should be their governor. For virtue hath this privilege, that even they who are not virtuous acknowledge its pre-eminence; so he remained governor, to the contentment of all.

He of the Tyger and his companions then sent for Daliarte, and Selviam the while remained in the ship, who being dismayed at the sight of Colambar, and by what he heard of the might of her brother, concluded that every thing was possible to his lord. When Daliarte came, they determined that the ship should sail for Constantinople, and one of Beroldo's squires in it; for he, who was not only a good knight, but also prided himself in being gaily adorned, had always two or three squires with him, that he might be the better served. This one was to present the emperor of Greece with the news of the victory in that island, and also to deliver Colambar into his hands. It was also appointed, that when Arlanza and the ship of Alfernao should arrive with the knight of the Savage, every thing should be surrendered into his hands,

lest any evil might come from him; s
the effect of the works of the wicked
the good cannot be at rest till they are
destroyed. From Arlanza nothing wa
ed; contrariwise, they desired her hono
comfort: for albeit she was bred up am
tyrannies of her father and the cruelti
her brethren, and notwithstanding
damnable condition of her mother, sh
always compassionate, benevolent, fu
pity, and virtuous inclinations; insor
that sometimes by her tears and intr
she had prevailed upon her parents
things contrary to their dispositions.

All things being thus determined, Ber

the vessel till she was out of sight, remaining then with their bodies upon shore, and their thoughts on the sea, for that way their hearts would have led them, though none of them could so greatly resent that longing as the knight of the Tyger; the others had sent letters and messages, thereby something relieving their wishes; but how could he who trusted his secret to none, find any such consolation?

When they had lost sight of the ship, as the day was yet young, and he of the Tyger little wont to spend idle hours, he asked the others if they would visit his Perilous Isle, which was hard by, saying it would not be well were he to pass so near and not call there. Well pleased were they, for the things of that island were such that men might well have come from far to see them. Argentao ordered a foyst to be made ready, whereof there were many there, being vessels which Bravorante used more than any others; and the four companions embarked in it, and Argentao with some of the chiefs in another, carrying refreshments with them, because

they knew not how the place whither they were going might be stored. So they departed from the Profound Island, rowing along its shore, that they might behold it at their pleasure, for there were many goodly towns and large villages therein;—any prince might have been well content with such a dominion. Argentao from his foyst told them the names of the places as they went along, and that the population was small according to the nature of the land, by reason of the cruelties of Bravorante. Thus they past that day, and during the night crossed over to the other island. When the morning opened, they found themselves near it, and cast anchor in the port where Palmerin had arrived when first he came there, there being no other there. Then having landed their horses, they would fain have mounted; but the way was so narrow, and the rock so steep, that there was no advancing except on foot; so giving their horses to their squires to lead, they began to ascend one after another.

Long time it was before they were come to the place where Palmerin found the mona-

ment, with these letters engrayen thereon: Pass no further. There they mounted, for the way then permitted it, and rode under those fair overbowering boughs, till they gained the top of the rock. The manner of that land seemed marvellous to the three companions, and to Argentao and his company, as also the goodliness of the trees and the strength of the situation. But when they were come to the fountain, they had then a greater cause of astonishment, for there they saw huge beasts like unto them which Palmerin slew, when they would not suffer him to drink of the water: these beasts were so cunningly and artificially framed, that though they were things of art, without life or spirit, yet were they so made to the likeness and exact proportion of the others, that their lifeless fierceness struck the same fear to the beholders. They were chained by the necks with the self same chains as the living ones had been, being themselves made of metal, by the hand of even so rare an artist as Urganda herself; who foreseeing it, and that the memory of a feat so notable might not be effaced by time, had placed

them here, upon the spot where it had be atchieved.

Now as this was as new a thing to him the Tyger as to his companions, he suspecte that it was one of Daliarte's works, and be sought him to resolve that doubt. Sir, re plied Daliarte, she which invented the ad venture of this fountain, did well, that as they who failed therein should be forgotten, so he which should atchieve the honour thereof should leave to all posterities a perpetual re membrance of him; and therefore she or dained these cruel beasts, framed in the na tural shapes of them which you slew, ap pointing that as soon as the natural ones de cayed, these should be placed in their stead to the end that they which come into th island may render continual laud and com mendation to your prowess. Moreover, i this place where you slew the knights of E tropa, you will find their images, being live carved in marble, of the same height an proportion as they were, defending the shields, which you will yet see hanging their several pillars, even in the same mann

s they were on the day of your victory and heir overthrow. Here you behold the foresight of Urganda, whose the island once was, and unto whom you are no little beholden, seeing that by her means your noble deeds are thus registered for perpetual memory.

Certainly, answered Beroldo, much is due to her, but more to him who had the power to end such a perilous adventure: as for myself, I may say, that though these beasts are lifeless, I stand in fear, and should not dare attack them; much less were they alive. Do you not see, said Platir, the letters engraven on this fountain? some invite us to drink, others warn us to refrain; but since the danger is warranted, we may taste. They then all went up to the fountain, and washed the dust and sweat from their faces, and having drunk of the water, commended the sweetness thereof above all other waters.

Argentao, and they of the Profound Isle, knew not what to say, for they had not heard ever to conceive of such things; and even Platir and Beroldo, albeit they were good

After they had well noted the singula
this fountain, they took their way
castle, where hard by the moat side
four fair jasper pillars, whereon hange
shields, like unto them which Palmeri
from the four knights, and there stoo
images of the knights in marble, havi
like armour and shields as the defender
shields had borne; and being large li
and of fearful strength, they well b
the worth of him who had conquered
The name of each was written upon tl
of his shield. These things excited a
tion in them all, nor was he of the
without it, seeing the dangers through
he had past, even as if they were pi
And now the bridge over the mos

igain, and Satiafor came out to wel-
hem and conduct them in.

iks, said Platir, when they had en-
the court, the things of this coun-
unlike those of all others; for if the
ures were perilous, the fortress and
nner thereof are not less admirable.
the more I see, the more doth it ap-
at the skill and knowledge of Urganda
:o be esteemed above all other. Platir
: err in this; for as these palaces were
or her own dwelling and place of
where for the most part she made her
having with her her friend whom she
) well, as is related in the history of
, she displayed the utmost of her
id ingenuity in the invention and
thereof: and when that skill was so
nt in all things, let any one judge
would be when it was employed upon
so greatly to her own liking.

; seen this apartment, they came to
:e where the giant stood, put as that
c one had been, with the iron mace

in his hands; but this they held for so little a feat, in comparison with the fore past, that they did not stop to look at it. From thence they went to the place where he had crost the river; and seeing the manner of the bridge, and the narrowness and rottenness thereof, and the depth of the water, the sight of this perilous adventure made them forget all the bravery they had seen before. Selviam, who till now had gone on rejoicing in his heart over the atchievements of his lord, now lost that joy, and the tears came into his eyes, having before him the perils which had been gone through in that fortress; but the knight of the Tyger perceiving this while his other friends were busied in beholding the occasions there present, went to him and said; Selviam, my friend, do not think that any feat can be difficult for him to atchieve, who hath the remembrance of the lady Polinarda on his side. This was enterprized and atchieved in her name; think it not therefore much. Then turning to the others he said, Sirs, let us waste no more time on things of so small importance, but go eat, for Satiafor is calling us. You

think little of them, sir Palmerin, said
ldo, for nothing can be much to you;
hey are not to be thought little of.

for then led them into a spacious hall,
ngular workmanship, and with a goodly
ect. A tank of water sounded by the
thereof, and supplied a garden well
ed with many trees, some for fruit,
s for shade, and all plants in due place
rder. Here they were set at supper,
served with such pomp and state, as
wanted nothing that could be devised;
atiafor, being desirous to witness their
welcome into the Perilous Isle, shewed
lf surpassing bountiful; as in truth he
by nature, and now also desirous to
e the knight of the Tyger. There they
the day, and when night came beds
provided for all from among the spoils
tropa, who, as she was a great lady, was
s well provided with things necessary
r guests, as was needful for her friends;
r her enemies, she had prepared other
me for them.

CHAPTER 117.

On the following morning the four cc
nions went into the garden, which amoi
notable things of that place was not le
be esteemed; for as Urganda was there
to pass the *sesta* in summer with her f
she laid it out after her pleasure. I
laid out in divisions which were sep
by broad walks, all in such rule and
pass, that in no part was there any i
larity, and planted on each side with
and wide branching elms, all of equal g

them all; and all were as new as if
d that day been finished. The walks
ved with white and green stones laid
ges, which gave them the greater
r and gallantry. As many as there
ts in the garden, so many were the
es of trees, plants, and flowers, con-
e to the place. In some there were
huge trunks, so high that they
to touch the clouds, and so thickly
you could scarcely find way between
nd so bravely branched, as the sun
ot offend any with heat; there was
delicate shadow, and of such quality
ure, that in the hottest calm of sum-
y always moved with the wind. In
here were trees reared for the uses of
the rarest fruits that nature could
; in others, flowers that blossomed
ear round, and of as many colours as
brings with her in her bravest array.
ere green plats without the intermix-
any other plants, of a short herb
shaven, whereon to enjoy the sun
should be delightful. Here rough
ggy rocks in another division, or

vered with ivy and other plants, according to their nature, and from the top there opened pipes of water, which fell from stone to stone, and were so curiously devised, that the sound of the water upon the stones presented whatever harmony the nightingales and all other sweet birds make in the season when it is sweetest to listen to them. At the foot of the rock all these waters were collected in tanks, fronted with a crystal stone wrought in masonry of Roman work, of such rare gallantry, that the eyes were not more delighted with beholding it, than the understanding was confounded in devising how it had been wrought. And what was most notable was, that none of all these things had suffered decay; but all retained their prime beauty and perfect nature; the trees had their full leafiness, the flowers their fresh blossoms, the fields their delightful verdure. And moreover, there were clear fountains in convenient places, the waters of which were received in secret pipes, and from thence spouted up with great force, when it fell again into great basons of the same stone as the tanks, and wrought after

the same fashion. From thence the water spread all ways, through metal channels, and watered the whole garden and every thing therein; and this not by the labour of any one, but the pipes were so devised as to direct it every where. This was not done without mystery; for that water was of such excellent virtue, either of itself, or that the quality of the earth imparted it, that by the virtue thereof all the things in that garden were preserved free from decay.

The knights had so much to do in beholding these things, that the hour of dinner overtook them, and they would not tarry long at table, for they wished to return again, and survey them at leisure; and in this manner they passed the day, and when night came on, they past the greater part thereof in discoursing of the great wisdom and discretion of Urganda, so that it was well nigh morning before they retired to sleep. When they were risen, Satiafor came to them with new tidings. Methinks, Sir, said he to the knight of the Tyger, that when the things of this island are old, novelties are still to be found

in it. In the midst of that garden wherein you were walking yesterday, and which I visit every day, and in the most open part thereof, I have now found a great square chamber, of the rarest work and fashion that I ever saw; for though all the other things of this house may well be esteemed marvellous, this, in my mind, is far above them all. I could not enter therein, for the door was occupied by two huge and terrible giants who guard it. Now, Sir, it is good that you try their courtesy, for I am persuaded the reward that is due to your knightly travels bestowed in conquering this isle, undoubtedly is within that place.

This news did so amaze the knights, that they started up presently, and armed themselves; and coming into the garden, they found in the midst thereof, which yesterday had been vacant, that stately chamber, which they stood to behold, as indeed it was well worthy to be seen: for the outer wall thereof were wrought with such subtle gallantries in white and hard marble, that it would have seemed full difficult to execute the like

in yielding wax. It had a lofty spire covered with tiles of many colours, so bright that the sight could not tarry long enough upon them to determine what they were; when they were eyed at distance, and so became more endurable, all that could be distinguished was, that one colour gave beauty to another, and that all were perpetually shifting their hues. From the top of the spire there rose a long flag-staff of silver, whereon was a square vane, after the fashion of a banner, made of incorruptible materials. On one side thereof the starry heavens were figured, with all the planets in their circle, and in the midst of them Mercury, attired in that ancient habit that they of old time did report him to wear; on the other was pictured Hercules, tearing in pieces the chief Cacus.

At the four corners of this house were four goodly trees, that were just of the height of the spire, and their branches spreading bravely all abroad; but such that none could devise neither their name nor quality, and they seemed things supernatural: and round about the house were glass windows of mar-

vellous costliness, that gave light plentifully into all places of the same, the glass having ancient histories figured on it which were well worthy to be noted. Methinks, said Platir, having well observed the whole, that since Urganda delighted to deck this so bravely without, no doubt she hath made it far more sumptuous within; let us therefore try the cruelty of the giants; and if they will permit us, see what there is. Sir Palmerin, I should greatly esteem the favour if in this adventure you would allow me to make the first essay; for here and every where else, we are at your commands.

Who, think you, would hinder you, replied Palmerin, in a thing which you desire so much? Do your pleasure, and free the entrance for us; for if you fail we must lose the hope of it. The brave Platir, that he might not hear himself praised by one before whose feats all others were of little account, advanced before he had finished these words, covering himself with his shield, and sword in hand, towards the giants, who taking their maces in their hands, prepared themselves to

receive him, and when he had set his foot on the first step, which was not past the height of one cubit, one of the giants coming two paces forward, as if he had been a living body, took him in his arms, and having thrown him down the two steps to the ground, returned again to his post.

Platir being greatly offended to see himself so used, came and made a second and third assault; but he was served as he was before. Beroldo then went and tried his fortune; but he sped as Platir did before him.

The knight of the Tyger, whose heart could not endure to behold the failure of his friends, went on without waiting to let Daliarte try his fortune, and advanced himself to the adventure; but as the treasure of that chamber did not appertain unto him, his lot was like that of the other twain: not indeed, that one giant threw him from the defended door, but both together advanced toward him, for an image of gold which stood over the doorway, and was made after the likeness of an old woman, clad in the manner of old times

called out to them both to do their duty, and not suffer her treasure to be spoiled by one who was not worthy thereof. Each then taking him by one arm, in spite of all his strength and courage, they threw him down the steps. Now, though these were things of enchantment, and therefore little to be felt or grieved for, yet he of the Tygers revolving in his memory all his good fortunes past, thought that now that fortune had reached its summit and was beginning to decline, seeing that after having atchieved things so great, he now prevailed so little in one of less consideration.

In the mean time, while his thoughts were occupied in this conceit, Daliarte advanced to the door, more to be partaker with his friends in their foil, than for any opinion he had himself to end the adventure; for he well believed, that where the flower of all prowess had failed, his would remain far behind. Howbeit, leaping up the steps, he offered to charge the giants; but without making any shew of resistance, they humbled themselves at his feet, granting him free liberty to enter.

ontented with this obedience, he stood while beholding the workmanship of the oor, which was of like excellency with the est of the building; when the image that stood bove, in the presence of them all, opened a ttle coffer which she held in her lap, so rich, nd of such surpassing value, as to be above ll price; and taking from thence a little key f gold, let it fall by a string of black silk, hich the sage Daliarte took, and without uy further delay opened the door. Then almerin, Platir, and Beroldo, joined him ithout let, and did all enter with him, and resently they understood that the conquest f that chamber belonged to no other than im who had atchieved it; and they held still higher esteem the wisdom of Uranda, this being her library, wherein she as always wont to study: and certes, though l the things which they had before seen were dmirable, and such as did greatly amaze them, et the sight hereof did very much delight eir eyes, more than any thing else they ad seen in the whole island.

his library was round about garnished with

shelves and desks of gold, and the desk
supported with birds and beasts of a
work, all of the same metal. The co
of these books were cloth of gold, ha
every corner placed precious stones
credible value, and the clasps also w
jewelry. The walls, higher than whe
books reached, were round about
with images of ladies made to the like
those who were most famous for the
and singular beauty, they being all i
robes and devices of apparel as the
wont to wear, each in her day; an
such a semblance of the life, that wh
held them could scant believe they we
less bodies, for in nothing did they re
things inanimate, save that the limbs

brance, especially when among those images they saw those which they bore in their hearts.

All along one part of this chamber were the images of such as lived in the time of Urganda, her own being in the midst of them, such as she was in the days of her youth, she sitting in a chair of gold, having a book in her hand. On her right hand was placed Oriana, the daughter of king Lisuarte of Great Britain, and on the other side was Briolania the queen of Sobradisa: then Leonarina, the princess of Constantinople, and the two princesses Melicia and Orlinda, each of them having their names imposed under them in letters of gold. There were none other but these, wherefore it is to be believed, that the others of their time, who had also the commendation of beauty, as is written in the book of king Amadis, were not worthy * of this immortality. On

* This seems to allude to the inferiority of all tinuators of Vasco Lobeira.

another side was to be seen Isco* la Blonde, Guenever, wife of king Arthur and mistress to Lancelot du Lake, the second Iseo of the white hands, with others, which in those days had flourished in Great Britain; it being Urganda's intention to leave some memorial of the wonders of that land, because she was a native thereof. On a third side were those of later days: the empress Polinarda, Agriola the empress of Allemain, Gridonia, Flerida, and Francelina, figured so near their just proportions, as there wanted nothing but life itself: all of them worthy high praise for their surpassing beauty; but Flerida was judged to exceed them all. On the fourth side were those who were still flourishing; Polinarda the daughter of Primaleon, Miraguarda, Lionarda the princess of Thrace, Altea, Sidela, daughter to king Tarnaes

* As the orthography of this heroine's name is doubtful, I have followed the Portugueze. It supplies another analogy against the reading which Mr. Walter Scott has followed in his edition of Sir Tristram. The stories of the Round Table were popular in Portugal in the fourteenth century—of this I have some curious instances to adduce hereafter.

of Lacedemonia, and Arnalta, princess of Navarre, who, though her actions were unworthy of that chamber, yet merited a place here for her beauty. Polinarda was seated in the midst of these, as she who seemed to excel the other; yet, if Florendos had been here, she would not have appeared so to him, and he would have had reason for not thinking so; for Miraguarda had such a look, that it seemed as if her place had been usurped. On the first side, Oriana and Briolania were of such equality together as it would have tried a sharp wit to say which of them was fairest: but yet Oriana had in her countenance a quiet loveliness, which made the beholders willing to allow the victory to her. But whoso had surveyed all in the chamber with a free and unoccupied judgment, would have judged that neither Oriana, Briolania, Polinarda, Flerida, nor Miraguarda, who were the fairest, was so fair as Iseo la Blonde.

The four companions were so amazed at what they saw before them, and each so occupied with his own thoughts, as not to notice the extremes of the others. Beyond them all, he of the Tyger, seeing the coun-

terfeit of her that did so much torment him, with the same native grace, and attired in the same manner as she was when he took his farewel of her, could not believe that it was a thing of art, but fell into such a conceit of imaginations as though it were his lady Polinarda indeed, and looked at her as though it were her very self, with the same fear; and silently addressed himself to her, saying, Lady, I know well that this is you; and since it is, it would not be ill done, if you were sometimes to change your will towards me, in recompence of my love and deservings. But to whom am I speaking, or what profit do I receive in using such speeches to her, who maketh herself deaf, and will not hear me, and dumb when she should speak to me; in every thing wherewith you should give life to me you are dead: but in all that can give me pain, I find you living, to my cost. If, however, it pleaseth you to treat me thus, what have I to complain of? For in fine, what you wish that do I wish also, and am content with the cruelty you shew me, thinking that you are so; and in this confidence I support myself, and it may be that in this I err. In this manner, each

ilent discourses to her whom he affected,
hey who had none present to discourse
let their phantasies rove at will, not
ing where to fix them. There Platir
the princess Sidela*, daughter to king
aes of Lacedemonia, whom he after-
s espoused, and became king of that
try. Beroldo the prince of Spain, find-
ıot his lady and mistress in this place,
ıot the same contentment as these, and
vould not confess to himself that she was
vorthy of a seat there than these others;
t is the nature of true lovers to be so
satisfied with those whom they do affect,
they will allow none other to have the
ıge over them. And in truth, Onistalda,
n Beroldo served, deserved to have been
ıg their number; and if she was not

; probably refers to the Romance of Platir. His mar-
vith Sidela is indicated in the latter chapters of Pri-
n, where Platir is appointed as his father's lineal suc-
in chivalry, and Pompides as Don Duardos's. The
icle of Platir was probably obscured by the merit of
esent story.

found there, it was only because Urganda had appointed that place for such as were paragons of nature.

When they had long looked on, Daliarte at length said, Sirs, methinks if you be not interrupted, you will take up your perpetual abode here, and these lifeless images cause you to forget them whom your duty commandeth you to remember; I pray you yield not so absolutely to these, which are no other but shapes without substance, for in the beholding these you do but mis-spend your time, looking for that recompence which they have not the power to give you. It is more necessary to go to them whom the pictures represent, who in time will more sufficiently content your hearts, than your eyes receive pleasure in looking on these toys, whose fantastic appearances you may at any time enjoy.

At this the knight of the Tyger turned to him, saying, What would you, sir Daliarte, that he who beholds the wonders of this chamber should do, but gaze upon them till

es all recollection of other things? For
f I am, I confess, so amazed at what
ore me, as scarcely to know where I
What then would he be whose heart
ven to one of these fair personages? He
in this manner, because he would not
is friends suspect his amorous thoughts:
arting thence, they went again to the
, where, provision being made, they
down to dinner, which being ended,
concluded to depart from the island, as
was now nothing more to see. Pal-
being then about to take his leave of
or, in the presence of him and of most
e other habitants, called for his brother
rte, and said to him, as he had long re-
l to do:

lid not hope, my noble friend and bro-
that fortune might one day advance
such estate, as I might be able in some
er to recompence the manifold courte-
I have received at your hands, you
t repute me of a base and thankless
e. And as at this time I possess nothing
ewith to manifest this my great desire,

I beseech you, as a pledge of it, accept this island, the thing of all others which I have conquered with the greatest risk of my person, and cost of my own blood; which I shall thus think well employed. And as this place is more worthy to be yours than any other person's, and you more worthy than any other person of it, I beseech you do not wrong me by refusing it. At least, remember, that that which was of most value Urganda reserved for you; accept therefore the lordship thereof, with the same will wherewith I offer it. And from this time forth I enjoin Satiafor to obey you as he hath done me, and beseech you to honour him as I expect, so that he may receive from your hands the guerdon of the much wherein I stand indebted to him.

Sir, answered Daliarte, they of this island have good occasion to be offended, seeing you will deprive them of yourself, to give it unto one whom it hath cost so little. I accept it because I know that herein I shall hereafter do you great service in things which are yet to come, and which time will discover; and I accept Satiafor, not as my subject,

but as my loving friend and companion, as well for the valour of his person, as likewise to let you perfectly understand, that I am he who vows himself always at your commandment. He then offered to take Palmerin's hand to kiss it; but he took him in his arms, and embracing him, said, God grant, sir brother, that time may give me wherewith to show you how fully I acknowledge all that I owe to you.

Beroldo and Platir thought well of this gift to Daliarte, saying that nothing was ever better bestowed; for the island appeared destined for his habitation, and for none other's. Satiafor, though he was sorry for the transfer, yet concealed his mind lest he should purchase the displeasure of his new lord, to whom he advanced himself to give obedience, praying however the knight of the Tyger, that he would not regard him as another's vassal, nor forget him. He of the Tyger replied in words with the which Satiafor remained contented, and which afterward were well accomplished with deeds. Forthwith they resolved to depart, leaving Daliarte

for some days there. The knight of the Tyger embarked in the foyst with Argentao, meaning to land upon the continent at the nearest point, and then send him back to his government; and he excused himself to Beroldo and Platir, giving them to understand, that he must of necessity go alone, for that he had an adventure assigned him, where he had promised to be on a day appointed, and must appear without a companion. They admitted the excuse, either believing it, or judging that it was his pleasure to travel alone. So they entered the same foyst wherein they were brought thither, and taking their farewel of him, they sailed towards Constantinople, the wind and weather serving them so commodious, as in few days they attained the firm land.

He of the Tyger in like manner landed in another country, and there dismissed Argentao, who with many tears, taking leave of him, returned to the Profound Island to assume his government, when the people welcomed him with that true welcome of which he was well worthy.

CHAPTER 118.

Some time after the departure of the knight of the Savage from the court of the emperor his grandfather, he and all his household being in great fear and sorrow, because there was no news of his preservation, and his destruction was held certain by reason of what his squire had reported; it fell out, that as the emperor was one day at table, talking with certain princes and knights concerning this misadventure and his own imprudence therein, Alfernao entered the hall, appearing now so much older than he had done upon his former visit, that they scarcely knew him; for the fear which accompanied, and the accidents of these latter days, had wrinkled his countenance much, and

weakened all his limbs. He, coming before the emperor, fell on the ground before him, and perforce kissed his feet, saying, Most powerful Sir, I beseech you, since your benevolence, humanity, and virtue are generally dispensed unto all, do not let me find them failing. Well do I know, that if you judge me according to my deeds, there is no reason why I should be excused from grievous punishment; but this your royal nature can supply, which is accustomed to forgive all offences. I, sir, for my misfortune, am that old man, who having attained to an age when it was time to have put from me all wicked thoughts, came to your court to practice evil devices, as I had ever been wont to do; and feigning need of aid, which I had not, you gave me your grandson Florian, to succour me.

Then began he to discourse the whole success, even as it had chanced, and how Florian had sent him there to relate all that happened; that the truth being known, all fear which would needs be entertained for his safety, might be removed.

Certes, Alfernao, replied the emperor, you brought me into one of the greatest troubles that I ever endured. I know not what patience could have been so great, as to forego the hatred which I bear you, had you not brought me news of my grandson's preservation. I give thanks to God who hath delivered him from your devices, and from the revenge of Colambar. Henceforth I shall be more wary; your dealing shall remain to me for a sufficient example how I give credit hereafter to tears and fair speeches, grey hairs, and feeble old age. I thank Arlanza for what she hath done, and if it fortune that she come into my court, will witness my good-will, to requite her virtuous deserts: that whereunto I am most indebted is the storm of the sea, which was the cause of his preservation. You may go rest yourself, and either stay their coming or depart, at your pleasure; for from this time you are at liberty. I will go to the empress and give her this news, of which she and her daughters have little hope. But as by this time the news had spread through the palace, before the emperor could rise up, she came in with Gri-

donia in her hand, and behind her Polinarda and the princess Lionarda, who was not the one who least resented the loss of her knight. The emperor received them saying, I see lady, I have been late in seeking you; but the desire which I had to hear all that hath befallen your grandson, and the perils which he hath gone through, delayed me. Then, making them be seated, he commanded Alfernao to repeat his former discourse. Alfernao, to whom it was full grievous to avow his own wickedness so often, did so, sorely against his will, whereat those ladies conceived a mortal hatred against him; for in women anger and the desire of vengeance are alway at hand, and the will of forgiveness is slow. And not being able to bear the sight of him, they made the emperor dismiss him, whereat Primaleon was well pleased to see their little patience.

At this time, that their pleasure might be complete, they heard a great uproar in the place before the palace—the cause whereof was, that Albaner, prince Beroldo's squire, who brought Colambar, by the knight of the

Tyger's command, was arrived, and was bringing her to the court. All the people ran to see her, as one of the most monstrous things which had ever been seen in that country, and the boys and children made an uproar which rung through the palace and the whole city. Being surprized at this, their surprize was yet greater when Albaner entered the hall, leading Colambar by the hand, for they knew not what this could be. As soon as Alfernao saw her, he knew her, and understood that all was utterly lost; and drawing near her, he said, It seems, lady, the same misfortune that brought me hither, hath had the like authority over you; I beseech you take all patiently, since it is the will of fate, and hath long been reserved for you. When Colambar, who had all this while eyed the emperor and those ladies, turned round and knew Alfernao, she began to cry aloud, suspecting that she was betrayed, as though with her voice she would have shaken the hall in pieces: and then such sobs came from the very bottom of her breast, so loud and mournful, that the empress and those princesses, with their wo-

men could not bear to hear them, and had pity and fear of her at the same time; for she was not only huge and ugly out of all proportion, but her lamentation made her appear more hideous and frightful. When at length her tears allowed her power to speak, she said with a hoarse voice, O Alfernao, is this the end of the trust which I reposed in thee, and of the love which my husband Bravorante, in his life-time, did bear thee? Where is Arlanza my daughter? Where hast thou left her? Into whose hands hast thou betrayed her, depriving me of my child whom I have trusted to thee?

Lady, replied Alfernao, it is plain you treat me as one not knowing what has chanced, nor is it much that you should suspect my truth, it being your nature never to have perfect confidence in any thing. I have just related my miseries twice, and must now yet once again repeat them for the third time, that you may understand what you owe me, and how little we both owe to fortune. Then having once more unfolded the whole circumstance of that which had happened since

his departure from her, at the end of his discourse added, your daughter Arlanza remains well pleased with herself, and saith, that if you would have her regard you as her mother, it is necessary that you must become the friend of him whom you have ever regarded as your enemy, and forget the death of your sons, and lay aside your hatred against him who slew them; else you must needs lose her as well as her brethren. Believe me, Alfernao, said Colambar, in all my misfortunes there is nothing which afflicteth me so much as these words, from her whom I brought forth. Would to God that the same end which I have seen my sons come to had befallen her also, rather than I had lived to see her affecting the destroyer of her race. Now then let all miseries fall upon me which the world can bestow. I neither feel nor fear them, nor will I have any consolation for this wretchedness! And with that new passion, unable to keep on foot, she seated herself on the ground, her spirits failing like one dead, so that it was some time before she could speak. In that while Albaner made known to the emperor the whole cir-

cumstance of what happened in the Profound Isle; both how Palmerin had slain the giant Pavoroso, and how his three nephews were deprived of their lives by the prowess of Beroldo, Platir, and Daliarte; news which did greatly satisfy Primaleon and Gridonia, hearing thus of the great chivalry of their son. He related, moreover, how the people of the Profound Isle had chosen the knight of the Savage Man for their lord, and because he was absent, Palmerin had placed Argentao to rule the Isle; and that they had departed to the Perilous Island, where they would remain a few days, and then take their way to Constantinople. I know, said the emperor, that all good fortune is reserved for Palmerin; if I had known he had taken with him so good a guide as Daliarte, I should have had little fear of Florian's safety. And now, would that I could see them here, for my condition tells me that I have but short time to enjoy them.

Then calling again for Alfernao, he asked him if it was the intention of the knight of the Savage Man to travel long in the realm of Spain.

Sir, answered Alfernao, he is not minded to return unto your court, before he have first shown the castle of Almourol to Arlanza. The princess Lionarda heard this well, and as she was already yielded up to love, it was nothing agreeable to her, thinking that the sight of Miraguarda would occasion some change in him; on the other hand, she remembered, that being there he would do battle with the keeper of the shield, and that when he had conquered him in her name, her praise would be the greater. Polinarda, who perceived these thoughts, being herself acquainted with such fears, said to her, let your knight, lady, go wherever his inclination leads him; for I dare assure you there is nothing in the world which can change that with the which he went from hence. Time will shew whether I know him well or ill;—have you no fear of Miraguarda's beauty, for you are one who need have no such fear of any! From you, lady, replied Lionarda, I cannot conceal this fear,—from any other it should have been dissembled: but this fear I feel, and am glad that you have relieved it. with these words, which, as being yours, do something assure me.

The emperor then bade Alfernao tell Colambar to take comfort, since her grief could not be remedied by this extreme passion, and to be sure that she should in that house receive a full favourable welcome, as the mother of Arlanza; and if she would become a Christian, such honours and bounties would be conferred upon her, that she might therewith forget a part of her sorrow. But as Alfernao began to persuade her to this effect, Colambar, not able to bear it, nor to hear such things, determined upon a new and unheard of action; and being full of despair and the favour of the devil, she rose up and said, How dost thou, Alfernao, recompense the faith and confidence which I reposed in thee, to render thyself so willingly on mine enemy's side; and by the persuasion of them thou comest to will me forsake the law wherein I have been nourished and brought up, and wherein I will die. Now then I will finish my life and thy treasons together, that it may be an example to them who do what they ought not.

With these words, she laid hands on him

l seizing him with all her might, lifted
n from the ground, and bore him to one of
: great open windows of the hall; and be-
:e any one could get to her to succour
m, she threw him headlong down, and
:rself after him; where, as the height was
'eat, and the place below paved, she died
'esently; but Alfernao, not being so heavy,
'ed until the next morning.

he emperor and Primaleon were grieved at
iis, but the empress and the other princesses
:joiced that they were so well delivered of
ie cruel Colambar, for they were still in fear
f her. And it being now late, they withdrew
iemselves into their chambers.

CHAPTER 119.

On the next day, after the bodies of Colambar and Alfernao were buried, as the emperor was sitting at table, and conferring with Albaner, prince Beroldo's squire, about many matters of the Profound Isle, an ancient knight whom he had given charge to guard the port of Constantinople, entered the great hall, and being come into the emperor's presence, he kneeled down, and spake as followeth:

Sir, if the news which were yesterday rehearsed of your grandsons did move content amid your sorrow, the tidings which I bring you at this present, will be no less welcome: within your haven is entered four galleys

)m the Great Turk, wherein are Polendos, :lcar, and all the princes and knights of)ur court, which have been kept thus long prison; I came to let you understand here- f before they were landed, that no one iight have the pleasure of bringing you the ews before me.

'he emperor was so surprised with this sud- len joy, whereof his hope had been full loubtful, that without making any answer e departed forth of the hall, and went down ato the court, almost without remembering 'here he went, or how he was going; but aving gone down, and then finding himself nattended, he stopt, and seated himself upon stone bench, waiting till a horse should be rought him. And though many persons 'ho now came spake unto him, and gave him oy of this good fortune, he did not make hem any answer, for that his mind was)usied in remembering how many happy ortunes had come to him one on another's leck: whereupon he humbly desired our ord to temper them with some little visita- ion of sorrow; for it is the nature of men of

good judgment, to doubt of evil after they have received good success, and when their fortune is in its highest state of prosperity, then to have most distrust thereof. In this manner he discoursed secretly with himself, and comparing every cause jointly together, the tears did plentifully run down his white beard, thinking how fortune favoured him in his extreme age, and how short a space of life remained to him to enjoy this happiness. While he was wrapt in these and other such imaginations, Primaleon his son, who had by this time heard how the galleys were arrived, came to him, whereupon he mounted his horse, and with a small retinue took his way to the port, where, when he came, he found the greater part of the people, as well the princes of the court as the inhabitants of the city, all greatly desiring to see the prisoners. By this time Polendos, Belcar, Onistaldo, with divers others, had landed, and that he might the better welcome them, he alighted from his horse, and embraced them one by one. But though this meeting was for him one of the things in his life which he had most desired, and

most rejoiced at, nevertheless he was troubled to see that Polendos and the rest of his knights bore with them evident marks of their misfortune; for the greater part of them came with beards grown out of all measure, pale and sallow complexions, and weak dispositions of body; and some who when they departed from Constantinople in the company of the princess Targiana, were young gallants, returned now with grey hairs, and limbs weak like old age, every thing bearing testimony of the life which they had endured: when they were all come on shore, the emperor received them with the same true love that he had ever borne them; and he held Belcar in his arms a long time, remembering how from a child, and even like his own son Primaleon, he had been brought up in his court, being the son of his own sister, and of Frisol, king of Hungary, his brother and especial friend; and thinking how to serve him, he had accompanied Targiana on this unhappy journey, on which he had set out a comely young man, and was returned so different; so that the remembrance of these things abated the

joy of this happy day. It may be, that at this hour also, seeing men before him waxed so old, who might easily have been his grandchildren, that he thought of his own great age, which according to the course of nature could not now last long. After he had thus embraced Belcar, and welcomed all, especially Onistaldo, the son of king Recindos, he turned to his son Polendos, and laying aside all sorrowful thoughts, took his arm, and walked with them towards the palace, enquiring as he went concerning their voyage, and of his friend Targiana. Primaleon went in the midst between Belcar and Onistaldo; and the other princes and knights in like wise, communing with their friends, followed the emperor. Having come to the palace, they there found the empress accompanied with all her house, attending their coming, and were received by her each according to the quality of his person. Forthwith the emperor commanded they should be brought to their chambers, for that they required rest.

The princes were lodged in the emperor's

house, according as it was the custom for those whom he esteemed at their arrival. But when they had taken their leave, there entered into the hall a Turkish squire, who coming before the emperor, began to salute him with these words; Sir, Almanzar, ambassador from the Great Turk, saith that he will not land, lest he might interrupt the joy which you receive in the return of your knights, and hath therefore ordered them to be disembarked. If in this there be any discourtesy, forgive it, since the intention excuseth it. On the morrow he will make you acquainted with the sum of his embassage, which he thinks will abate somewhat of your present contentment.

In truth, squire, said the emperor, I find I have been forgetful in not speaking to him, nor enquiring for him; but if this be an error, the pleasure of this meeting must be my excuse, and if it can be amended, willingly shall I make the amends. To-morrow, since he chuses to pass the night in his galleys, we shall meet, and then I will atone for the forgetfulness of to-day. The squire de-

parted with this courteous answer, and the emperor and empress withdrew themselves each to their chamber.

On the morrow the emperor heard mass in the house of the empress, where he also dined, at her request, that she might entertain Polendos, Belcar, and Onistaldo. When dinner was ended, the emperor commanded the principal knights of his court to go welcome on land the Turk's ambassador, to whom he would shew himself honourable, as well for that he had brought back his knights, as because the Moor deserved to be honourably welcomed, being a great personage.

Polendos, Belcar, and the rest of them that had been prisoners, went foremost, to receive him on shore, because they would not have him think that they had forgotten the kindness he shewed them on the seas: whereat Primaleon was somewhat displeased, because his nature could not suffer him to use such courtesy towards them he knew to be his professed enemies; but the emperor thought

it well, for in this his disposition differed from that of his son.

Polendos with his company being come to the quay, he with Belcar and Onistaldo took a barge, and went aboard the galley to the ambassador, and brought him on shore. The Moor seeing such principal persons, and so great nobility, for Polendos told him who they all were, knew well that this exceeding humanity came from the greatness of mind of him that was their lord and governor; whereupon he judged that a man so well beloved of all, should find more friends to aid him in his necessity, than enemies to molest him.

This while the emperor attended the ambassador's coming in the empress's chamber, accompanied with Primaleon, and many princes and knights of his court. The ambassador being the same that came before to propose the exchange of Albayzar, as he now knew all those princesses, did his devoir to them and to the emperor with greater courtesy and less pride than he had displayed

before. The emperor welcomed him graciously, and besought his pardon if he had yesterday shown any neglect towards him. Sir, he replied, I well know that things which are greatly esteemed, make others of less worth forgotten. Your highness did nothing for which you need demand pardon, nor have I ought whereof to complain; but letting this pass, I say, the doubt must well be remembered which then was of delivering Albayzar to me when I was first here, lest the Turk my lord should not send home them whom he kept as prisoners: I at the time affirming, that his word was sufficient security for the fulfilment of the terms. That doubt is now removed, since his part is thus before-hand performed, and I know not whether he now will be without some, till he see Albayzar in his house, having no other pledge than the word of his daughter Targiana, who became surety on your part. She beseecheth you that you release her by sending home Albayzar, of whom the Turk himself willed not me to use any speech. When this is answered, I have then another embassy to deliver in his name, with the

which I know not whether you will be well pleased, your age requiring nothing such.

I know not what this may be, replied the emperor, but this I know, that fortune hath so exercised me in great occasions, that I doubt whether she can offer me any which I should greatly fear. For the princess Targiana, I think myself highly bound to her, in that her intreaty won the liberty of my knights; and surely it grieveth me that her father should be so hostile towards me, as for her sake I would fain it should be otherwise. The trust which she hath reposed in me, that I would discharge her of her pledge, hath not been misplaced; she knew me better than her father, who, because he wanted this knowledge of my person, wanted also that confidence in me which he should have had. To her I am bound for all the favours she hath done, and it is only by the will I feel to requite them and to serve her, that I find myself deserving of them. As touching Albayzar, I have writ to king Recindos, that he should send him, relying upon this exchange; and I believe it will not be long

before he come hither: wherefore I pray you abide here a few days till he come, then shall you be dispatched to your content, the Turk your lord be rid of his doubt, and the princess Targiana satisfied.

I believe, said the ambassador, he will be here sooner than you expect; for the damsel who formerly came here with the princess Targiana's bidding, was dispatched in a galley, twenty days before my setting forth, that she should let king Recindos and Albayzar understand of my coming, and certify them of the liberty of your knights, that there might be the less delay. Of this, therefore, there is nothing more to be said till he shall come. Give order now that this letter of credence be read, and then I will declare what farther I have in charge.

There pausing, he took forth of his bosom a letter written in parchment and sealed with the arms of the Great Turk, which he presented to the emperor, who caused it to be opened; and perceiving thereby

that the Turk willed him to give faithful credit to what the ambassador said, he desired him to say on: whereto the ambassador thus replied;

Sir, I know you cannot have forgotten the coming of the princess Targiana to your court, neither the manner of her coming; your grandson beguiling her from her father's house. Now inasmuch as she being here was entertained by your excellency, the empress, and the princess Polinarda, in such gracious manner as she esteemeth herself during life bound to you for your manifold courtesies, my lord the Turk saith, that though for old enmity he hath all his life desired to make war upon you, and conquer this empire, whereto he hath been required by his vassals, and importuned by his friends; yet having present the entreaties of his daughter, and the obligation wherein for her sake he stands bound unto you, he would fain be your friend, and put all past enmities in forgetfulness, with this condition, that you do him justice in one thing: for according to what is said

of you, he holds you for such a lover of justice, that even in those things which touch you the most nearly, you would display your virtue. Should you refuse this, he will be constrained to take that just vengeance by force of arms, which you deny him. It is, that you deliver, or cause to be delivered unto him, the knight of the Savage Man, that he may deal with him according to his heinous offence; and as you are perfect in all things, that you do not fail in this of your wonted virtue. If nevertheless it be otherwise, he here revoketh all the desire which he hath shown for your friendship, and all good will toward you, deadlily defying you and your court, and resolving to take the most cruel vengeance that was ever seen.

I could have wished, replied the emperor, that when justice was required at my hand, it had not been required with threats, lest, if I had the will to render it, they should have deterred me: but there is no justice in this which he demandeth. If he saith that Florian brought away his daughter, I answer, that he did it at the earnest entreaty and desire

of herself. In fine, I hold it time lost to allledge any defence in this matter; suffice it, that nothing shall make me deliver up the knight of the Savage Man, unless it were to one who would esteem him as I do myself. And though I were willing to consent to this, he himself would not consent, for he is his own lord; nor his father, who is a mighty prince. If nevertheless these reasons be not sufficient to avoid the defiance, it is welcome! I am sorry it comes not in a season when I could shew him in arms what I once was myself; as it is, I choose rather to have the knight for my companion, than to expect such courtesy as the Turk would shew him. Other answer you are not to look for at my hands; you may go now rest yourself, and when Albayzar cometh, if your find the weather convenient, you may depart, and if not, as long as you tarry here, such honour and welcome shall be shewn you, as you deserve and I desire. I well knew, said the ambassador, this would be the answer which my embassy would needs have; and having thus fulfilled my charge, shall say nothing more thereon.

Polendos then rose, and besought the emperor that he would suffer him to entertain the ambassador while he staid there; and bringing him into his lodging, failed not to let him see, that enemies were better welcomed in the emperor's court, than friends were by the Turk.

Primaleon was well contented with the answer of the emperor his father; for he had neither patience nor moderation at hearing the pride with which the biddings of the Turk were accompanied. Who will think, that the princess Lionarda was not troubled at hearing the knight of the Savage Man demanded, that he might be sacrificed among his enemies! in truth, till the emperor had fully declared himself, her heart was full of fear, caused by the love with which from the first moment she had regarded him. This fear was not so well dissembled but that the lady Polinarda perceived it, with whom, after the empress had retired, she held talk concerning the matter. And as Lionarda knew nothing of the coming of Targiana to that court, or how else the matter stood, she

besought her to declare how these occasions had happened.

When Polinarda had herein satisfied her mind, she remained in great sorrow: for hearing of the worth and beauty of Targiana, and of the ingratitude wherewith the knight of the Savage Man had requited her, she reputed him as a man without faith, love, or regard of loyalty, and she would gladly have devised the mean whereby to banish the remembrance of him forth of her heart: which Polinarda perceiving, and grieving to behold so great and sudden a change, began to seek how she might do away this intention which she had unwittingly excited. Lady, said she, think you that Florian will be the same man to you as he was to the princess Targiana? You must remember, that love from him toward her was neither lawful nor honest, beyond what was necessary for him that he might get out of the hands of the Great Turk her father: and from that court he could never have escaped by any other means than this which she presented. But after this, would you have had him not

remember that he was a Christian, and she a Moor; and to do her pleasure, would you that he should have offended God? Certes, far more would he have been condemned if he had done otherwise. But such dealings are not to be expected toward you, who are fairer than Targiana, as great in rank as she, worthy that all the world should serve you, worthy to have this confidence, and far more worthy of blame if you should at any time lose it. The knight of the Savage is yours; in your name he trusts to overcome all dangers, nor doth he desire any good to himself that is not thus attained. I pray you therefore do not by any means deprive him of this certain trust.

You have such power over me, lady, replied Lionarda, that what you say changes my thoughts and resolutions, though I see things which make me doubtful. Is he not travelling through Spain with a bevy of women after him, showing love to them all? I know not how he who scatters it among so many, can have any fixed affection for any one.

Sweet lady, said Polinarda, I pray you let not your spirits be troubled with these trifles, things which you should not remember, and which cannot make him forget you. He is used to such things; he remembers them when he sees them, forgets them when they are out of sight; and still more when he sees you. All his remembrances are for you; trust this, and trust me, who have long known him. These speeches did persuade her, and with that they went to rest, both desirous to see the end of these uncertain affections, which, till they find their end, are never endured without care and trouble.

CHAPTER 120.

The ambassador of the Turk staid ce
days in the court of the emperor, in the
pany of Polendos, waiting for the co
of Albayzar, and receiving far other
ment from him than Polendos had i
in Turkey; the emperor and Prim
could not sufficiently commend the g
ness of Targiana, marvelling that such
fect goodness should be found in one
of so curst a father; for the prisoners
speak of nothing but the bounty and h
which they had received from her, in d
of his will; holding it certain, that her
ransomed them from their prison.

But leaving them, let us return again t

knight of the Savage Man, who journeyed on after he had vanquished the four knights in the valley, and gotten the damsels, till he arrived in the city of Brusia, which is at this time called Toledo, where king Recindos then made his abode, who was at that time not a little glad; for tidings had come to him of the liberty of his son, and the other knights which were held in captivity by the Great Turk.

Having arrived in the place before the palace, being armed in other arms, that he might not be known by his device of the Savage, (for he was wont in this manner to dissemble himself, when he would fain remain concealed,) there he stopt with his helmet on, and sent a squire to let the queen and her ladies understand, that Arlanza and the other damsels in his company had besought him to display some proof of his person in that court. The squire went into the palace, where he was brought to the queen's apartment, the king himself being there; for he had dined there in the company of the queen and her ladies; and casting his

eyes round, though he saw many dames, and some who were right fair, yet he judged that all that he saw was as nothing in comparison of what he had seen in the court of the emperor. Then having first humbled himself to king Recindos, he came to the queen. and kneeled down and spake as followeth:

Lady, a strange knight, in whose company I come here, being on his way thorow your realm, had resolved not to try himself in arms against the knights of your court, for the great desire he hath to do service to the king, even though time or chance should have given him occasion. But now, being forced by the request of certain damsels whom he hath brought in his company, whose will he cannot disobey, he must forego his own, and therefore beseecheth your highness, that if there be any among the knights of your court who will maintain the beauty of their ladies against him, and will combat with him upon this quarrel, they may be permitted so to do. He doth not ask this permission of the king, because it is a thing of

this nature, and because he would not seem to have come to his court with any intention to disserve him. Well were the king and queen pleased to see an adventure of this kind in their court, being so little wont to see them; for the emperor's court of Greece carried such a brave report, that all the noble knights in the world went thither to try their valour, and for that all the adventures were reserved; and if any adventure were approved in the realm of Spain, they were altogether done at the castle of Almourol, and for that reason they failed at the court. The king of Spain seeing the queen was embarrassed how to reply, and that she looked to him to see what he might command, said to her, Methinks, lady, you ought not to refuse the gentle offer of the knight, as well to satisfy him, as that you may not wrong your ladies; for all would gladly see the courage of their favoured knights. Then, said the queen, since it liketh you so well, my gracious lord, that the request is to be allowed, thou mayst, squire, say unto the knight, that the king and I do think well of his coming to our court, and that we do permit him the liberty of the

the freedom of the field; and if
desire to rest himself, let him do
morrow he may put his intent in

The greatest rest or quiet, said
the knight my master desireth t
that he may find such knights on
may bestow the breaking of so
and since your highness hath g
the joust, let your knights see now
will do, while I return with my a
making his obeisance, he departed

Then the king went and looked fo
of the windows, and seeing the kn
field surrounded by so many d
called to the queen, saying, Co

plied the queen, after she had seen them, it cannot be denied but that they are greatly indebted to him, since for the sake of some, he does not regret others. I should think by his suffering so many, that they were near akin to him, if there were not one among them who seemeth to be a giantess. I was looking at her, said the king; the man must either be crazy, or some great adventure makes him travel about with such a burthen!

While they were thus talking, Albayzar came out to see this adventure; for the news thereof had been reported to him in his chamber. He came upon a large iron-grey horse, unarmed, and clad after the Spanish manner, a man of goodly and spirited semblance. And coming to the window where the king and queen looked forth, after making to them due courtesy, he entered into talk about the knight and the bevy of damsels. The knight heard them, and how they judged of him, and he eyed Albayzar well, and thought him well made, and fit for great things, and he longed to do battle with him, for he remembered what had passed between them in the

castle of Dramorante the Cruel. But from these thoughts a knight interrupted him, who came into the field, armed at all points, and desirous to be the first in winning the victory over this stranger. He rode a horse which was of the colour of a bustard; his arms were checquered in gold and silver, and he bore in his shield a white hart in a field sable; and being confident of victory, after making obeisance to the king, he would incontinently have jousted. But the squire who had been before sent with the message to the queen, went unto him and said, Sir knight, he of the Damsels saith, that he is not accustomed to let his actions be so cheap, but that he must have his recompence if he remain victor. Wherefore I pray you let him understand what shall be his prize if he chance to conquer you: for if the victory fall on your side, he will yield the damsel unto you which you shall think best in all his company. The knight replied, It well appears that my love and his are full different, and that he does not feel the incumbrance of carrying them about, because he esteems them so lightly. Tell him that the lady whom I serve hath not

given me such power over her that I can adventure her against any one; that I come hither to make him know her worth and beauty are greater than any of those in his company can boast, or any whom he knows. If I can approve this upon him, I desire no other prize than the satisfaction of victory, with the which he also ought to be contented, should it be his fortune to win it from me. I beseech him therefore let him show me for which of his damsels he will do battle, and tell me her name, that I may know what I gain.

The squire returned with this reply to the knight of the Damsels, who thought it good; and in answer to the question, for which of his damsels he would do battle, bade the squire say it should be for the ugliest of them, for he thought she would suffice for the occasion; as for her name, he did not know the name of any one of them, but if the knight should conquer, he might then learn it from herself. I perceive, said the other, the pride with which thy

master cometh hither, teacheth him to hold so little ceremony with one who has held more towards him; I will see whether I can abate it in this encounter. The king and Albayzar heard all this, and wished to see whether the deeds of the knight of the Damsels would answer his words. By this time they had placed their spears in rest, and ran at each other. The knight was one of the best in that court, a person of great rank, and who served Polisia, the daughter of duke Ladislao, in whose name he thought he could have overthrown all the world; he delivered his encounter with all his force, full upon the shield of his rival, and pierced it, and reached the armour, though without doing farther hurt; and there the lance brake: but he of the Damsels bore him lightly out of the saddle, scarcely feeling that he touched him. He recovered himself quickly, like a good knight, and drawing his sword, came to revenge the foil he had sustained in the joust; but he of the Damsels said, Sir knight, I craved license for nothing beyond this; let me joust with these other

sirs who are ready, (for by this time there were five knights in the place,) and if I shall come from their hands in a state to do battle, I will then do your pleasure. But though this reply ought to have been admitted, the knight would not receive it, saying, that perforce he would have the combat, till the king interfered, and bade him give place to the others, according to the conditions with which he of the Damsels was come. Upon this he retired, full discontented that he had not tried his fortune to the uttermost.

Forthwith one of the five came forward, armed in red arms, and bearing in his shield a forest with all flowers that nature bringeth forth. But though his valour had taught him to be confident, he had the same fate as the first; and so fared the third and the fourth. Methinks, said Albayzar, the knight of the Damsels does not defend them so badly, that they can be won from him without trouble. And as in these encounters he had broken the three lances which he brought, the fifth knight stopt, waiting till another should be given him. Albayzar

sent him one of his own, for he jousted sometimes; it was black, and the iron thereof gilt. He of the Damsels would not take it, saying, Tell Albayzar, he must excuse me from accepting his lance; the little love I bear him maketh me reject any thing from him. Then taking a lance that was sent him by the king, he charged another knight in such sort, that he burst his girths, and sent him saddle and all to the ground, where he lay for awhile stunned; his own horse ran on in the career, till he came to the window of the king, close by Albayzar. Now as Albayzar was of his condition proud and haughty, and was incensed that his courtesy had been rejected; seeing him so near, he took him by the arm, and said, Don Cavalier, it was because you did not know me, that you despised my gift, and therefore I pardon you. Do not think of pardoning me for that, replied he of the Damsels, for I know you well—you are Albayzar, soldan of Babylon, to purchase a bout with whom, I would give more than I have here. You shall not go without it, quoth he, seeing you know me; stay till my armour be brought hither, and I

will chastise you with this very lance which you have refused. If fortune favour you so much as to leave you then in a plight for any thing farther, we will do battle, and I will then teach you with what courtesy any thing from me is to be accepted.

I would thou wert armed, quoth he of the Damsels, for I will demolish the arms upon thy body as fast as thou canst put them on. Incontinently Albayzar sent for his armour, and the king for a horse for himself, on which he came into the place, being troubled at this dispute; for he would not that Albayzar should fall into any mishap before he had been delivered to the emperor, in whose hand the prisoners were for whom he was to be exchanged. He therefore resolved not to permit them to do battle, because he feared the prowess of the knight of the Damsels.

The queen was well pleased to see this adventure in her court, and the dames also, it being a new thing there; and especially they who found their pastime at the cost of

others, whose servants had been ove
and they thought the damsels
guarded, and would not be lightly
long as their champion thought pro
fend them. One thing they could
prehend, why so good a knight sh
been won by women of no great
and some said, that since he had m
such prowess for the ugliest of th
would he do when he fought for t
So they past the time, some laughi
resenting the mishap of their serv
thus the world goes, and the joy o
the sorrow of others.

CHAPTER 121.

Not long it was before two of Albayzar's squires returned with their master's armour, which was black and gold, the gold being less than the black, so that they seemed to be worn for mourning, which made them the more gallant. Having armed, and taken the same lance which the other had refused, he came to the king and said, I beseech you, sir, do not prevent me from taking vengeance for the contempt with which this knight hath treated me, whom I am sure you would not have receive any shame in your court. Sir Albayzar, the king replied, I would fain that you should receive every honour that can be done you in my house, and nothing which you should think contempt; but to grant

you the combat against this knight, I neither can nor must consent to it, for I know not what might chance, and the emperor might have cause to complain of me. I ween, quoth Albayzar, this lance shall do as much as I would have it; but if it do not, I may well complain on your highness, in that you will not suffer me to satisfy my desire. What need of so many words, cried he of the Damsels; let us joust if you please, and after that do as fortune shall favour you.

I pray you, quoth Albayzar, do me so much favour as to tell me who you are; I would gladly know, for two causes: the first, that I might not be ignorant of the knight whom I shall vanquish: the second, if so be I speed not according to my desire, that I may know whom to seek for in all parts. I will not satisfy thee in this, replied the other; know this, however, that I am the greatest enemy thou hast in this world, and I grieve that I may not have liberty of the combat against thee, because I long have wished to have my fill on thee: but since it is the pleasure of the king it shall not be so, I must

wait the time, when I may deal with thee according to my desire.

If I be not deceived, said Albayzar, now I know thee, and remember that I saw thee in the castle of Dramorante the Cruel. I have in memory also the words which then passed between us, and I promise thee, that if I live, they shall be remembered with these which are now passing, and many shall suffer for thy offences; for there shall be none to come between us then, and debar me from the vengeance which I would otherwise now take. But leaving this melancholy for its due time, I pray you break a lance with me in the name of some woman whom you greatly esteem, that as mine is to be adventured in the name of Targiana, it may be with more pleasure. Whichever you think the ugliest in my company, replied he of the Damsels, her I will take for my patroness, and in her service I will joust, to show you that any favour is sufficient for me. I beseech you, said Albayzar, change this intention, for what is due to the worth and dignity of her who makes me ask it. You make me

do what I thought not to have done, replied the other. I have one in my mind, to whom I would fain not have commended myself, except in matters of greater moment: since you urge me thus, I will joust with you in her name; and that you may be altogether contented, I assure you that she is fairer than Targiana, of equal worth, and little differing in estate. Ask me not who she is, for that secret is reserved to myself. Now then, quoth Albayzar, let us have no more delay; my soul cannot brook to hear another praised against one who cannot be disparaged.

Then these two knights departed to fetch their career, and ran together with a greater eagerness peradventure than either one had ever felt before, Albayzar having before his eyes the love of his lady Targiana, and the hatred and abhorrence of his enemy, and he of the Damsels the remembrance of Lionarda, and that this was the first atchievement which he had attempted in her name. They encountered together with such force, as their lances flew up into the air in pieces; and so

they passed on, not being shaken any thing at all. When they were come to the end of the race, they took new staves, which were broken again like as the first were, and yet no further advantage on either side.

The king made great estimation of the valour he perceived in the Damsels knight, and wished to know who he was; Albayzar was already known, and held in great account for his prowess. Now they tried the third lance; this career was either ran with greater force, or they were less able to endure it than at first; for he of the Damsels lost one of his stirrups, and was well nigh cast back upon the crupper, and Albayzar lost both, and was constrained to catch hold about the neck of his horse. Greatly offended they were both at these reverses, and taking other lances, Albayzar said, I pray you, sir knight, let there be some terms between us, and let it be thus:—before he could proceed he of the Damsels answered, I will have none but ill terms with you—no more words therefore; for I will either overthrow you, or never trust more in thinking of another, but live

free from such thoughts, as I have alwa done.

Certes, quoth Albayzar, a little thing would make you forsake them; that appears by what we see. Nevertheless, I beseech you, let the matter stand thus: If I overthrow you, that you go present yourself before the giant Almourol, and say to him, that by your means I have acquitted the bond, wherein Miraguarda so straightly tied me, though indeed, from that I was already loosed; but I do it that she may see what the force of an encounter is when given in the name of Targiana. You, if you should overthrow me send me where you please, and I will do you bidding, provided that it delay not my journey. You have so wearied me with proffering conditions, replied he of the Damsels that I will accept this, lest you should propound more. And if this career do no suffice to end this contest, I never will deliver another in trust of any one, but commend myself to myself, which I have alway found the surest way. Then they separate to fetch their course, and encountering wit

e force which their horses could carry, lances were splintered, and they hurtled her, shields and bodies, with such a shock he knight of the Damsels lost both his ps, and remained almost astound, and Al- r being stunned, fell, and lay for some before he came to himself. He of the iels, when he had righted himself in the e, seeing him thus, said, Methinks you ot he who has lost the most by being for- n from doing battle. And then order- is helmet to be taken off, he began to er, and perceiving his discomfiture, the to do him honour, alighted and helped se him up. Albayzar, said he of the iels, what I will have you do is this: when you arrive in the emperor's , you present yourself before the ess of Thrace, whom you will find there, whom, if love hath not blinded you, vill deem fairer than Targiana, and say r, that a strange knight, who calleth lf the knight of the Damsels, hath anded you to present yourself before is one who has been conquered in her ; but that it grieves me, seeing this is

the first service which I have rendered her, that it should be of less consequence than I could wish.

I will do your bidding, replied Albayzar, for it was a covenant between us, and one day, if I live, I will present thy head to my lady Targiana, in revenge of the shame I have this day through my weakness received. That, quoth he of the Damsels, shall be seen to when we meet hereafter. Your highness, (turning to the king,) will now suffer me to depart, for I have much to do elsewhere; and pardon me for not declaring who I am, which at present I cannot do; suffice it that here and in all places I am at your service. I am not so easily contented, replied the king, as to be satisfied with this little compliment; but since it is your pleasure to remain concealed, I beseech you come this way again in your own person; for all honour should be done you because of what we have seen, though we know nothing more of you. I kiss your highness's hands, said he of the Damsels: this is according to your wonted goodness, and nothing else was to be ex-

pected from you. Then taking one of the lances that were left, he gave a reverent shew of obeisance to the king, the queen, and all the ladies, (each of whom were dying for him, and he for all) and so he departed with his company.

The king returned into his castle, accompanied with Albayzar, whose heart was so marvellously overcome with grief, as he would not speak to any, nor suffer any to speak to him. The queen would fain that the king had not permitted the knight of the Damsels to depart, and her ladies were still more sorry for his departure; all women affecting novelties. Yet did they resent Albayzar's foil, having wished the victory to him, because of his conversation in that court, and the worth of his person.

He of the damsels was not very far from the city, but the dark night drew on, and they being in a forest, concluded there to rest themselves for that night; for it was in the summer season, when they might sleep any where. So they stopt under some goodly

cork-trees, near to a fountain of clear wat
Here they alighted, and having taken the
supper of what they carried with them, t
knight retired farther into the wood, that
might leave them to themselves; and thro
ing himself at the foot of a tree, with h
helmet for a pillow, began to think upo
Bionarda, and this new passion deprive
him of sleep: yet had it struck such litt
root, that any thing made him forget it.

At this time Arlanza, who was tormente
more by her love, seeing her companio
were all fast asleep, while her passion w
awake, and being desperate to see it forgo
ten by him, and not able to dissemble h
pain, after a thousand struggles, puttir
aside what became her honour, she dete
mined to seek him; and going to him whe
he was laid, she found him waking, and sa
herself upon the green leaves beside hir
and began to say, O knight of the Savag
the wrong you have done me ought hav
sufficed for your revenge, though I had n
been forced to undergo this shame; for m
wishes are not so much concealed but th

you know them,—but even in this it seems that fortune persecutes me. I beseech you, since I thus plainly express my fault, pity me, lest it should lead to yet a greater. And when she had said thus, she fell with her head upon his breast, as one almost senseless. He took her in his arms, and with gentle words, not according to his wonted condition, consoled her, saying, Lady Arlanza, I do not so little esteem of you, that I would show it in any thing injurious. I beseech you hold this to be my true meaning; and if you would have me speak plainer, I will tell you, that before I was so much bound to you as now I am, I intended to solicit your love; but since you have made me so greatly your debtor, I am not so ungrateful as to requite you with a short contentment which would leave behind it perpetual regret. I have in my own mind provided a husband for you, such as your bounty doth well deserve, and for this I reserve the state which your father left, which I will take care shall be given you, and more thereunto, for your service: I would not that there should be spot or stain upon you to lose this, or make me deal un-

worthily towards one who may deserve you. Hold me, I pray you, to be your truest friend; and put away from you this other thought, as it behoveth you to do. Then he took her hand and led her again to the place where the others slept. But Arlanza, though she made him no reply, for sorrow and shame at what had past left her silent, was yet determined not to be thus rejected. And waking one of her damsels, the very same that gave the fatal ring to him in the Castle of Alfernao, and who was the one whom she loved best and trusted most, she told her all that had past, and besought her with many tears to give her some help. In truth Lady, replied the damsel, I do not see that you ought to hold yourself aggrieved, for if the knight of the Savage denieth what you desire, it is for your honour; nor do I believe that one so brave and of such royal blood would speak to deceive any one, but that he will do for you what he promiseth. Quiet yourself, therefore, and be better satisfied as it is, than if you had found in him the welcome you wished. Howbeit, if you will permit me, I will ask him to tell me with whom he designs to marry you,

and will speak to him concerning you, to see if I can incline him. Arlanza, threw her arms around her, saying, I knew, my friend, that in you my remedy was certain; go to him, and if you cannot prevail upon him, at least excuse me, that I may not seem so bad a one.

Then the damsel went to the place where the knight was lying before, but he had moved, that Arlanza might not again come to him; she however found him lying on his face under a great oak, and laying her hand upon his side, she said, Methinks that he which enforceth ladies to live in sorrow, because he will use no more regard unto them, ought not so easily to take his rest. The knight hearing the voice of a woman, opened his eyes, and seeing it was not Arlanza, but the damsel whom he liked best amongst them all, welcomed her with far other words than he had used to her Lady, full of his wonted deceitful ways. But before he had expended many she stopt him, saying, Sir knight, I come to argue with you; tell me why you do not remember that for your sake Arlanza

hath forsaken her mother, forgotten th
death of her brothers, lost her patrimon
and put her person into your hands, and y
you scorn her. Lady, replied he of the S
vage, the nights are so short, and this is s
much to reply to, that there would not b
time to do it before morning. But I as
you, for what occasion you have forgotte
me, seeing that I deserve to be remembere
by you, and that do what you will, I cann
but love you. So in his wonted way he dea
with her, who was nothing loth, and wh
when she returned, reported a thousand fabl
to her mistress of things which had neve
been spoken of.

CHAPTER 122

n the morning the knight and his damsels esumed their journey; and as he perceived iat Arlanza was troubled, and did not dare ook at him as she was wont to do, he drew ear her, and talking of things which were) her honour and advantage, soothed her id relieved her of those painful thoughts. nd then he turned to talk and jest with all is company, so that the journey seemed othing wearying unto them: but this pleased ot Polifema, who was the damsel that Arnza sent to move her suit to him the preeding night, for she thought that she derved better countenance at his hands than ll the other, and shewed her jealousy in her ountenance when she saw him speaking to

anoth·r; for in these things they have neithe dissimulation, moderation, nor patience The knight, over whom she would fain hav had that power which he allowed none t have, perceived it and heeded it not, talkin with one and sporting with another, sh having the least share in his attentions (all—so that she was fain to show other sen blance towards him, lest that should be su pected which she would not have known and in this way the knight went on, he bein disagreeable unto them, or they so litt discreet, that before they reached the cast of Almourol, all of them had reason to r pent the journey, yet none knew that the re were partners with her in her misfortun and then, according to his condition, he beg to wish to get rid of them.

It chanced five days after their departu from the Spanish court, that they came o evening into a fair green field, which w decked with flowers, and there they to delight to stay awhile, because they wou make them garlands for their heads; wh they had made their chaplets and plac

hem round their brows, they mounted again nd went their way, jesting one with the ther. But to change their jocund humour, ıey beheld to come from a rank of trees, a night in manner of a giant, mounted on a orse meet to carry such a mighty person: is armour was grey with silver edges, and in is shield he carried for his device, Hydra, ıe Serpent with seven heads, in a field vert. le had two squires attending on him; one f them carried his lance, and the other a attle-axe, the blade thereof being gilt: hen he was come nigh, he said in a loud oice unto him of the Damsels, Knight, I 'as some few days ago at the castle of Al- ıourol, where, having been conquered by ıe picture of Miraguarda, I would fain ave conquered him that keeps it, that I ıight afterward take his office. But it hap- ened to me far contrary to my desire, and am persuaded, that her favour makes him ıore victorious than his own force is able: ıe consideration hereof doth not a little ffend me, so that I am determined to re- enge myself by other means. Wherefore, dvise thee well of these two conditions I

shall put to thee, which of them thou shalt best like of: either to surrender these damsels which bear thee company, or to do battle with me and so lose both them and thyself; make your choice at once, for I am cholerick, and brook not to be kept waiting.

Friend, quoth the other, if you think to find less resistance in me than in him whom you have left with so little satisfaction, you are mistaken. I give thee to understand, that I am not accustomed to fear such as speak with such a glorious pride in themselves, neither can the huge stature of a giant dismay me; if thou didst presume to take the worst garland from any of these ladies' heads, I would die to defend it; how much more then to defend them themselves.

The affection, said the knight, which thou bearest to some one of these, maketh thee not to esteem the danger wherein thou mayest fall: but seeing thou wilt be so lusty, I am content, for courtesy sake, to offer thee this condition. These ladies are nine; let us divid them, and he who takes the four shall

have the large one, meaning Arlanza, to make the share more equal; and to shew thee how reasonable I am, I will take the smallest share. The other replied,

I wish thou hadst as many damsels in thy power, as thou seest here in mine, that I might take them all! I will not give thee one of them on any terms whatever, and however much thou mayest intreat me. So either take them by force, or get thee going about thy business. I see, said the knight, that thou wilt have me hurt thee against my inclination, so look to thyself. Then he called his squire, who brought him his lance, which when he had couched, he ran courageously against the knight of the Damsels, who met him bravely in the midway; they encountered without hurt, save that the knight of the Valley lost his stirrups, and would have fallen if he had not caught hold of his horse's neck. And as they passed their horses ran against each other; now that of the knight of the Valley was a stronger one, and the other being weak, and weary with long travel, fell, and might have hurt his rider if he had

not deliverly leapt off; whereat Arlanza an her friends were little pleased, fearing th strength of his enemy. For though t what they had seen they knew the excelle prowess of their knight, yet the bigness ar fierceness of the other made them doubt t battle. He of the Valley, who was som what shaken with the rough encounter, seei him on the ground so ready for the comb began more to fear him than he did befor but as he would let no weakness be seen, alighted, and with sword and shield in ha said: If thou art so much a friend to thi own life, as to agree to the condition I ma thee before we jousted, I will still consent it, for I would rather have them by fair mea than by force. Care you nothing for th replied he of the Damsels, for you shall p for the loss of my horse by going on fc yourself: and so without wasting any mc time in words, he began to charge the knig fiercely, which when the knight both s and felt, he likewise laid on with huge a weighty strokes; and as the other found mc resistance in him than he looked for, he w fain to put out his whole might, and ev

then he doubted the issue, his enemy was so doughty. But as the battle lasted long time, and he of the Damsels did his endeavour to show his companions what a servant they had, he prest his enemy, never giving him an instant of repose, till in the end, not so much with the loss of blood as with the faintness of his body, he was constrained to fall down to the ground: the knight set his foot on him, and taking off his helmet, made show as though he would have smitten off his head; but the other yielded himself to his mercy, desiring that it might please him to save his life.

He of the Damsels answered, I am content to give it thee, on condition thou wilt fulfil what I command thee. I know nothing, said the knight, which I would make any account of to save it. Thou shalt first, then, quoth he, tell me what and who thou art, and afterward, thou shalt take one of the horses from thy squires, (for I must have thine in place of the one thou hast killed for me) and go thy way presently to the court of king Recindos, and there before the queen, thou shalt say

on my behalf, that the knight of the Dan
sels who jousted in their presence again
Albayzar, saluteth them, and desireth suc
favour at the king's hands, that he will thir
no ill because he made not himself known
him; but thou mayest assure his highnes
that I will not fail to make myself know
at my return from the castle of Almourc
and tell him of our battle, and upon wh
quarrel it was.

Sir Knight, replied he of the Valley, sin
fortune hath brought me into this extremi
I shall not fail to obey you. I am call
Trofolante the Fearful, if you have heard
me. Oftentimes, quoth he of the Damse
so you need say no more, but go your w
if you would discharge yourself of th
wherein you are bound. Then he mount
on Trofolante's horse, which seemed to h
one of the goodliest that he had ever l
strode; and leaving him and his squires
the field, set forward on his journey w
the damsels, in the same manner as befo
talking of love and things of that nature, a
as forgetful of the battle as if it had be

fought with one of less account. Thus he went on sporting through the rest of the day, till having left that valley they came into another, through which there ran a little brook, shaded with many trees. And riding along, he saw three knights on the other side, in gay and gallant arms; who, when they came opposite to him, stopt, that they might eye him at leisure. One of them pricked forward and called out to him to halt, upon which he checked his horse and turned towards him, to hear what he had to say. Sir Knight, said the other, I want one of these ladies, and as I cannot tell which of them would please a man best, I will beg you who know them to tell me, and whichever best satisfies you I will be content with. I like them all so well, he replied, that he who would take any one of them from me must pay her full price. But I, cried one of the other two, will not let mine be of your chusing; for having looked at them all, my fancy doth affect her that exceedeth the rest in stature: for tho' she is not over handsome, I like the condition of her. I was inclined that way also, said the third; but since you are

before me, I will content myself with her that rideth next the tall one, meaning Polifema, because methinks her beauty exceedeth all the other: wherefore sir Knight, as we have saved you the trouble of chusing for us, you may chuse one for our comrade, and then go your way with the rest; you need not be uneasy about those you leave, for they will be taken good care of. Let him who would have one, replied he of the Damsels, cross the water, and take her at what she will cost. With a good will answered the first knight; and seeing your stomach serves you so well, I will shew you what you get by this resistance.

Upon these words he passed the river, with his lance in rest, and ran valiantly against the knight of the Damsels, who was ready with another, the squire of his party having brought store from the court of king Recindos, and entertained him with such a puissant stroke as pierced shield and armour, and sent him over the crupper in such plight, that where he fell there he lay, not having for a while power to rise. When the other

two knights saw their fellow foiled, they came over the river together; for being abashed at his valour, they durst not venture to try it one after another, but ran both together against him, and encountered him upon his shield, where they brake their spears without moving him; but he, whose lance remained whole from the first, brake it upon the second so much to his liking, that he sent him to keep the former company, having his arm broken by the force of his fall. Then drew he forth his sword, and welcomed the third, who, sword in hand, bravely received him; but the battle did not endure long, for he of the Damsels so punished him as in a little while he tumbled down before him.

Then he commanded one of his squires to alight and take off the knight's helmet; and when they were recovered, he told them all three that each must do the bidding of the damsel whom he had chosen, or he would put them to death; and they in their fear, thinking this a light penance, consented full willingly: whereupon one of them came

to Arlanza, with these words: You, lady, are she whom I affected; command me what you please, since my ill luck is such, that I am in her power who I thought should have been in mine.

I have so little need, said she, of your service, that I know not what to command. Howbeit, as I rejoice to have his deeds bruited every where, who every day saves me and these ladies from the hands of evil-minded men, I command you to go to the king of Spain's court, and there, on my behalf, let all the ladies understand what desert is come to you for your wretched dealing: and say, that I advise them, if fortune should lead them into the roads and woods, that they go with a good defender, since there are others in the world like you and your comrades, of whom they should stand in fear.

And you, lady, said the second knight to Polifema, what shall it like you to command me? Marry, quoth she, that you take the same course that your companion doth, not

forgetting to tell the ladies, that though the advice of the lady Arlanza, my mistress, is good, better is it that they trust to none; let them seek for a quiet life, and not go travelling in the woods; for tho' they may take a defender who will protect them against others, they may need one to secure them from him. Her knight well enough understood her covert meaning, but yet he dissembled it after his wonted manner. And now, Sir, said the remaining one, what do you enjoin me, since I had not time to make a choice, but left it to you. I am not so unreasonable, replied he, as to separate you from your comrades. Go with them, and since these ladies have sent them to the dames, do you also present yourself before them on my part, and say, that I beseech them, when they have any danger to pass through, that they would commend themselves to me, who will save them, and that they are not to fear any danger from me, nor to be deceived by the advice of those who say otherwise. But tell me your names before you depart, that I may demand another day, whether you have fulfilled your promises or no. Sir,

quoth the one, we are all three of tl
court whereto you send us, and thi
greatest shame and the worst fortu
could befall us; nevertheless, your e
prowess must be our excuse. They
Gravanel: this is my brother, who is
Barbosante, we twain being the sons c
Loban; and the third knight, whc
cousin, he is called Clarisalte, a
reputed man in the court of Spain.

Certes, sirs, quoth he of the Damsel
persons as ye should act suitably t
rank. But as damsels tempt all the
and I myself am sometimes tempted
chances, I hold your fault the less.
ing, he rode on with his company.

CHAPTER 123.

English Chronicles, from whence this
y hath been translated, do relate how
long before the knight of the Dam-
ould reach to the castle of Almourol,
se he was hindered in his way by many
ts who ventured themselves to take the
ls from him, which he had taken
e of. Leaving him they proceed to say,
ne day after the departure of Albayzar,
ng Recindos stood pleasantly talking
the queen, and many knights in the
ber with him beside, he beheld to enter
dly tall knight, his countenance (for
ad was unarmed) stern and somewhat
led, his armour broken in many places,
o besprent with his blood, as the co-

lours and devices thereon could hardly be discerned. His shield, which was carried after him by his squire, was splintered in such sort that little beside the handles remained. And as none present knew him, and they saw him in that manner, there was a stir among them all at beholding him. But he, who was of haughty condition and prided himself in that haughtiness, forced his way through them till he came to the queen's estrado, and having made some little obeisance to the king, he turned to her, saying, Lady, I have combated with a knight, who not long since was in this court, and jousted against Albayzar; he hath in his company nine damsels, and I desired him to bestow the one half of them on me, whereto he would by no means consent, but made me answer, that he could wish I had as many in conduct as he had, for then would he take mine from me, to bear his ladies company in travel. Upon this, I intended to take them from him perforce, which he would not suffer, but made such resistance against me, as in the end I was not only conquered, but was at his mercy, which he granted me,

n condition, that I should come and pre-
myself to your highness, and crave par-
on his behalf that he would not let
self be known in your court, which he
do on his return from the castle of
ıourol: in the meanwhile, he craveth that
would pardon him for his offence past,
obtain for him the same forgiveness
n the king.

ıow not, said the king, how I should remit
displeasure, in that he hid himself from
who so much desired to know so signal a
ı; and now, seeing your armour so much
ıced, I prize him still more. O Sir, said
queen, whenever he comes, all must be
ried to his account, for I cannot think
h a knight as he is would desire to pass
nown to your highness, without some
nest occasion.

ın said the king to the knight, I pray you
me who you are. He replied, they call
Trofolante the Fearful. I have, said the
g, often heard talk of you, and for this
ıse hold the knight of the Damsels in still

higher account. If you saw his face, of what age is he; and I pray you tell me if you know him?

Sir, said Trofolante, I neither saw him, nor know him; but I judge him to be one of the sons of Don Duardos, for I do not think such strength and courage would be found in any others. And now that I have discharged his commandment, I beseech you license me to depart, for I have much to do elsewhere. You may go, replied the queen, for there is nothing to detain you. And I would no other thing with you, said the king, but that you would take a better armour at my hands, because your own is not in case to do you service, and that you choose a horse from my stable: for though I know your intention was always to serve the emperor Palmerin, I would not that any one who came in need to my court, should depart with the same. Sir, answered Trofolante, I kiss your hands for this bounty, but as I come, so will I go. Your license is all that I ask, and seeing you have granted me that, God be with you, I go my ways: and with that, turning

his back, he departed in such plight as he had entered. The king gave the queen to understand who this knight was, and extolled the prowess of him of the Damsels to the stars, in that he had conquered him so easily: for Trofolante was among the most signal knights of those times: but he would not believe that any of the sons of Don Duardos would come into his court, and depart again without his knowledge.

While they were thus communing, Gravanel and Barbosante, the sons of the count of Loban, entered the hall with their cousin Clarisalte; they were held in that land for especial knights in arms, and their armour was broken in many places; having made reverence to the king and queen, they came and presented themselves before the ladies, to whom they rehearsed their fortune, and that which the knight and the damsels had commanded them. And though their mishap was resented by all, yet were the ladies well pleased at the messages which they delivered, and all affirmed that Polifema had received some displeasure from her protector.

I shall never be perfectly contented, said the king, till I know who he is. A man who having conquered Trofolante the Fearful, in fair fight, was able the same day to discomfit you three, without hurt to his own person, should not be unknown. I will send after him, that his prowess may be rewarded as it deserves. Believe me, said Gravenel, after conquering us, he remained fit for another battle. This is the strangest thing in the world, quoth the king, for it is the nature of all men to be tired of one woman if she be long in their company, and for him it seems all these are not enough. So having given the knights their license, they departed, well content with the fame which they had there found of their conqueror; for by how much the more his feats were held in estimation, the less they felt the shame of their overthrow.

But now returning to him, it is related that he passed through many adventures on his way, arising from the same cause as the former, the company he took with him, and which were atchieved with the same honour.

At length they came in sight of the castle of Almourol, and riding down the Tagus, where being summer time, the trees were full of leaves, and the water went with a quiet flow, they thought the place so pleasant, that all the labour of their journey thither was put clean out of mind. Now, said he, we are arrived at the place where each of you must display the force of your beauty, in favouring him that will enterprize the combat on your behalf, for at the foot of yonder fortress is the picture of Miraguarda, which maketh him who defends it perform such wonders. It is believed, that though he were weak by nature, and of little worth, yet the picture before him would give him strength not to be overcome by any, but they who have better to defend, and have been such excellent knights by nature, that none could win any honour from them without bringing their lives into extremity. Wherefore, ladies, cast lots in whose name I am to joust, or do battle; that I may now see whom I carry with me, and whether I have spent my time well in serving and accompanying you.

Now as it is the way of women, th
some of them know how little they are
holden to nature, to be so vain, that the
est will not allow any one to have the
vantage of her in beauty; this vanity r
them so confident, that there was not
among them who did not think that al
world might have been overthrown in
name. Polifema, who had the gre
opinion of beauty in herself among thei
said, I know well, sir knight, that the vi
which they gain who enter the combat
Miraguarda, proceedeth of their true
loyal love, which gives them strength v
they need it. But you, who have none to
and deserve none from any, do you c
mend yourself to yourself when in dar
and if mishap befall you, blame yourself,
not those who have no fault therein. T
is none of these ladies of so little beauty,
that you might enter the field in her r
against any one, if the little love with w
you treat them did not prevent you. H
plied, I perceive, lady, that you are offe
at something, and treat me ill without ca
wherefore, to put you out of this ill suspi

I am determined to enter the combat under the favour of your beauty, when you shall well perceive how erringly you have judged of me.

So riding on, they came to the castle, at what time Miraguarda was coming forth to recreate herself in a boat upon the water, being accompanied with her damsels and the giant Almourol: for at this time she had larger liberty, owing to the tranquillity of the kingdom. When he of the Damsels saw her so near that he could fairly fix his eyes upon her, he was not so much master of himself, but he felt suddenly stricken with her beauty; yet had he a good quality, which served him, for the passions that tormented him by the beauty of ladies, were of no longer continuance than while they were before him. Then turning to his damsels, he said, What think you, ladies, and what will you have me do? Be not dismayed, replied Polifema, we think nothing of what we have seen. Miraguarda by this time seeing this new company, stopt, that she might behold them more at leisure.

Florendos, who was not far off, being armed in his wonted armour, was so transported in beholding her, that he remembered not what he had to do; this being natural with unsuccessful love, for they who are favoured, are not so forgetful. Almourol, who perceived the confidence of the strange knight, and knew that Miraguarda did greatly delight to see him combat, called to him, saying, Sir Florendos, look before you, and do what you have to do, for the lady Miraguarda stays only to behold you.

Florendos then turned toward the damsels, and seeing their knight prepare himself to the joust, he presently mounted on horseback, and coming to the stranger, said, I pray you, sir knight, to tell me upon what occasion you are come hither? if you are compelled to travel with these damsels as your penance, and must be delivered from it, peradventure I may fortune to release you. Certes, sir Florendos, replied he of the Damsels, I would give more than I have that any one except yourself had guarded this pass to day, let him be who he would beside, that I might have

shown these ladies whether I am good for any thing.

I cannot tell, said Florendos, what answer I should make him that hath so good knowledge of me; nevertheless as your horse seems so good a one, I would desire you break a couple of lances with me, for the service of the lady Miraguarda; and if either of us should remain so discontented as to desire battle, it shall be at your choice whether or not to perform it, since you know me, and I know not you. The case is, replied the other, that there is not that thing in the world which could force me to do battle with you, sir Florendos. As for the joust, I am willing to satisfy the lady Miraguarda, for I desire to do her pleasure, for your sake, though it should be at my own cost. And after we have jousted, if sir Almourol should wish to break another pair of lances with me, and to do battle afterwards, he shall have his will, that these my ladies may confess what there is in me. It is plain, quoth Florendos, that these words arise from the confidence which you have in your deeds. Let it be as you please,

for as for Almourol, he I know will be ple
with what you propose. Here breakin
they took their ground, and with their s
in rest, ran against each other, both
desirous of victory; for in such a place,
in the presence of women, who woul
contented without it?

CHAPTER 124.

le these knights were preparing them-
:s to the joust, Almourol stepped between
ı, desiring them to stay a little till Mira-
da could take her place at the window;
eeing what was about to be done, she
retired into the castle. The knights at
set their staves to the ground, and
:d till one of the windows was made
y for her: it was not very high, so that
:ndos could well behold her, and having
: this longer than was necessary at such
ıe, he turned to him of the Damsels, and
ing pardon for this delay, ran his career
ıst him, who received him in his strength.
r met in the midst of the career, with such
t force, as the truncheons of their lance,

flew up into the air, and they passed on, no thing shaken at all. Then taking othe lances, they ran a second time, and with such fury, that both missed their encounter; and as neither of them was accustomed to fail of his mark on such occasions, they turned, being resolved to take surer aim in the third trial.

Florendos was somewhat discontented at perceiving the prowess of his adversary, and feared lest any misfortune should happen to him, which might renew the unreasonable rigour of his lady; and he of the Damsel was sorry that he had begun the joust, because of what might happen, not regarding so much what might chance to himself, as to Florendos, knowing the temper of Mira guarda. He therefore essayed to preven this, saying, Methinks, sir knight, as we hav neither of us any reason as yet for con tentment or complaint, we may be satisfie with what is done; you cannot purchase an renown in conquering one of your servant who verily would be sorry that you shoul receive any misfortune at his hands, in the

it might hinder you, in place of most hope. Wherefore, I pray you give me leave to break two or three lances with Almourol, which will yield some contentment to these ladies that bear me company.

I well see, quoth the knight of the Castle, that this willingness to leave off before we have pushed our proof to the end, arises from no want of confidence in yourself, your deeds show that; and I know not withal how it would be imputed to me, if before I knew more of your person, I should cease to try myself against you, till one of us perceived the other to be the better. Either therefore you must tell me your name, that knowing that, I may determine as shall seem best, or we must return to our joust, and break spears, till the victory or the shame remain with one of us. To tell you my name so much before hand, replied he of the Damsels, is what I will on no account do; and to joust again is against my will, but I do it to satisfy yours.

Then placing their spears in rest again,

they ran their third career with all the fury that their horses could carry, and meeting shields and bodies full butt, the shock was such that the horses could not stand it, hurtling one against the other also, so that both came to the ground with their riders. His of the Damsels had his shoulder broken, that of Florendos burst open at the breast; but their masters leapt off, and were presently ready. The knight of the Castle being melancholick at this mishap, drew forth his sword to enter the combat.

Sir knight, quoth the other, do not so often seek to try your friend, who desireth in any thing that he may to do you service; I have said that I cannot do battle with you, and this is not for any fear I have of your valour, but because the duty of friendship forbiddeth me such ungentleness. If you are dissatisfied that you have not overthrown me at your pleasure, I might have had the same reason for discontent with regard to you, if I regarded nothing more than the desire of victory. I pray you sheath your sword again, and reserve the

trial therewith, till such a one come as shall seek you with a more malicious intent than I do.

Miraguarda heard the whole discourse, and could have been content, for the boldness she saw in the stranger, to see the combat tried between them; for the better she thought of him, the more she wished this, according to her humour. This is a strange thing, cried Florendos, that you would have me be satisfied with having done nothing, and yet will not tell me what reason I have to make me so! I will tell you, quoth Artesia, one of his damsels: He is so used to show himself off upon knights whom he does not fear, and so persuade us that every thing is little for him, that he will not finish this battle, lest he should lose his credit with us; and he will excuse himself to us by saying, that he would not risk his person against the beauty of Miraguarda, when he had none on his side to favour him; as if each of us were not sufficient for that. Certes, madam Artesia, said Polifema, you say true, and I am glad you understand our knight so well. And

they all affirmed the same after her, was their nature to wish to see discor danger. O Ladies, cried he, I see that thing is lost upon you; but thanks t self, I am so much the master of m affections, that I can do what I will, thence it is that I am seldom deceive them.

These words were not spoken so low bu Miraguarda and her knight heard them though she judged him to be a man wi love and without faith, to him they se to come from one who was at liberty, whom love could do neither good nor But he himself desired not to live ir liberty.

The giant Almourol, perceiving tha knight of the Damsels would not do with Florendos, caused to be brought a goodly bay courser, and sent it to requesting him to mount it, and do som with him before the lady Miraguarda she might be recompensed for her pointment in not having seen the

contest terminated: and because he should have the better will to the combat, he wished some prize should be ordained, in requital of his pains that remained the conqueror. The knight made this reply: Look what it shall please you to appoint, and if it be reasonable you shall not find me contrary thereto. If you are willing then, said the giant, I will risk the horse which I have sent you, as you are without one, and which is one of the best I ever saw, on condition that if you are conquered you give me that lady—pointing to Arlanza,—who is the largest in your company; for since you arrived she hath appeared so well to my liking, that I affect her better than I ever yet did other. And I beseech her not to be discontented with these conditions, for if I win her she will be mistress of me, and if she remain with you, I know not that she will be mistress of herself. I do not, replied he of the Damsels, give the things which I greatly esteem so cheap, yet will I accept this horse, if so be the victory fall on my side: and if it come to pass that I am vanquished, it shall be at her choice to abide with which she

will. Content, answered Almourol, for I do not hold her to be of such poor understanding as that for a man so free as you she should be willing to reject a will so devoted as mine.

So without more words, they placed their lances in their rests, and being covered with their shields, gave their horses the spurs, and encountered together so bravely, as the Damsels' knight forsook both his stirrups, but Almourol was cast to the ground with his saddle between his legs, not a little offended to have such a disgrace in the presence of his new chosen love.

The damsels commended greatly this gallant beginning, but chiefly the four whom he won in the valley; for as they were not used to see giants, and the sight of Almourol had dismayed them, they esteemed the worth of their knight the more. Almourol having recovered his feet, drew forth his sword, and came towards the knight, who presently alighted. He desired to delight the damsels, and to appear well before Florendos, and to

show Miraguarda, that not for fear of her knight he had refused the combat. On the other hand, Almourol judged that in that battle he was to win or lose Arlanza, whom he marvellously affected, so that on both sides they did wonders, putting out all their force, and each dealing signal blows, to the cost of him who received them; so that in short time their armour was broken in many places, and their bodies so grievously wounded that the blood ran from them plentifully; but Almourol being not so nimble and quick as his adversary, was brought into the greatest danger. After they had thus continued long time without intermission, Almourol would fain have drawn back a little, to take breathing; but he of the Damsels would not suffer him, and followed his intent so fast upon him that he brought him to the earth, with such a wound in the left thigh that he could not move. Florendos was grieved to see him in this plight, and Miraguarda being sorry for his mishap, departed from the window, commanding that he should be brought into the castle. Florendos went with him into his chamber, to see his wounds looked to, *which* were dangerous.

Then the damsels, though they disliked their knight, or at least little loved him, seeing him wounded, assisted him to unarm, and there in the field, at the foot of a tree, they looked at his wounds, which were slight; so after they were bound up he armed again, and mounted on horseback, intending to depart thence. But as he was about to set forward on the way, two knights of some far country arrived at the castle, who came to try the adventure. One of them was in carnation coloured armour, beset with griffins of silver, and in his shield was figured a white hart in a field vert: the other was in armour of black and yellow, in the figure of wedges, and in his shield he bore the sun in a field sable. When they came up, he in the carnation armour said to his comrade, methinks the *sesta* has not taken us in a bad place: for if our luck should be so much against us as that he which keepeth the shield of Miraguarda, will not do battle with us, this knight, to rid himself of so great a charge as he hath with him, will give us part of his company.

Certainly, answered the other, I had the same thought, and if he would not have given, we would have taken them; but who could content himself with things of so base estimation, having before his eyes the shield wherein is pictured that countenance which maketh every thing else be forgotten. At these words, his companion raised his eyes, and seeing the shield of the picture of Miraguarda, which the other showed him, hanging on the tree where it was wont to be, he answered, Thou sayest true, and I know not who could be so void of understanding that he would not rather lose himself for those beauties, than be content with any other hope of any thing, were it ever so greatly to be desired. I assure you, said the first knight, I intend not to depart from this place without I carry this shield with me: yet would I, if it were possible, first make trial of my worthiness against himt that durs deny me to take it hence. So, advancing himself to the tree, he offered to take down the shield.

The knight of the Damsels was, as ye have

knew nothing of what was going
would not suffer, that in his pres
one should offer him so great wrong
fore he broached his horse with t
and when he came to the place w
shield of Miraguarda hanged, he
knight by the arm, and pulled hin
horse, saying, It well appears that
not one who would try your person
adventure, seeing you would thus sa
the shield from its keeper. But sin
not present to defend it, I will
place, and see if you can carry it
your manhood.

Miraguarda heard all this, for she ha
herself at a jealousy of one of the v

perceiving himself thus thrown down and treated with such contempt, and being by nature haughty and courageous, drew his sword without waiting to remount, and covering himself with his shield, came against him of the Damsels in such wrath that he could not bring forth a word. But his companion came between them, saying, Amount upon your horse, Sir, and in the mean time, I will try if the valour of this knight may answer his insolence; and giving his steed the spur, he ran at him: but he, who on such occasions rejoiced to display his worth, met him with such an encounter, having his full desire at him, as neither his shield, armour, nor mail-coat could defend the push of the lance, but it passed clean thorow his body; so that the strange knight tumbled beside his horse to the ground with the spear in him, being altogether deprived of life.

He of the Damsels past on, and stopt under the window where Miraguarda stood, expecting the coming of the other knight; who ran at him with all his might, and brake his lance upon him: they met so closely that

he of the Damsels had time to lay hold on the top of his shield, which he pulled from him with so great force that he burst the straps and brought his head on the neck of his horse; where, not permitting him the leisure to recover himself, he gave him with his own shield a blow on the crest of his helmet, which made him giddy; then dropping the shield, he caught him by the straps of his helmet and plucked it off his head, and dealt him with it another blow which forced the blood from his mouth and nostrils, and sent him to the ground.

At this time Florendos came out, who being with the giant, heard the noise of battle, and marvelling at a thing so unaccustomed as that battle should be done there, when neither he nor Almourol were present, went to see what it might be: where, when he saw the two knights lying on the field, the one run through the body, and the other like one dead, he had still more to wonder at.

Sir Florendos, quoth he of the Damsels,

these are the deeds wherewith I would do you service. I am as yet ignorant, answered Florendos, in what to think myself beholden to you; for I see two knights here who should seem by their armour to be of some account, slain by your hand, I know not upon what occasion. I will tell you, he replied; this one who is still moving, would have carried away the shield of the lady Miraguarda, and the other was the favourer and aider of his attempt. I, knowing how this concerned you, went up to them, and either by favour of the lady Miraguarda, or by their ill fortune, have brought them into this condition. I am sorry they were so few, for by what I felt in me I could have given you good account of them, though they had been more.

I beseech you Sir Knight, quoth Florendos, tell me who you are, for the more I see of your feats the more do I desire to know the name of him whose prowess hath so deeply indebted me to him. Sir Florendos, answered he, you shall not be left with any displeasure from me. I am Florian of the

Desert, your cousin and servant, who will not suffer you to receive injury in any place where he shall be present.

Now then, replied the other, I do not think much of any thing which I have seen, for any thing is little for you. Howbeit, do not in addition to the wrong you have done me in not telling me this sooner, commit the greater one, of refusing to stay awhile with me; it will heal the wounds of Almourol, when he knows that he received them at your hands.

I do not think, answered the knight, that you will wish me to tarry here, in that I am bound to be at a certain place by an appointed time, which if I should fail to do, I should lose something of mine honour; suffer me therefore to depart hence; and as I see this knight is recovering, I will pray you to take his oath of obedience, and then command him, that on the part of the knight of the Damsels he present himself in the court of king Recindos, where he shall declare to the queen for what occasion I did combat with his fel-

low and himself: and I request you again to pardon me for not tarrying, as I can do no otherwise than depart.

Florendos laboured to dissuade him awhile from his journey; but he would by no means be moved from his determination: so taking leave, he set forward on his return, accompanied by the damsels, who every day held him in greater estimation than they had done before.

CHAPTER 125.

The knight of the Damsels with his company began to measure back his way to the court of king Recindos, intending when he came thither to discharge himself of some of the damsels, and retain none in his company but Arlanza, and those that attended on her to do her service: for from her he did not intend to separate till he had seen her given in marriage, and honoured according to her worth, and the will he had to requite her. And though his intention was to travel with much speed, he met with some adventures which delayed him; and among others one which obliged him to increase his company when he would fain have lessened it. It is related in the chronicles of his atchievements, that as they were one day riding along a river side, where

the country was full of high trees and thickly set, he heard the voice of a woman crying pitifully, from the closest part of the thicket; it seemed as if some one were endeavouring to force her, and her voice was almost spent. Upon this he gave his horse the spurs, and rode toward the sound; and because the trees were so close that he could not well pass, he alighted and advanced on foot sword in hand. Having reached the water side, he saw on the other side of the river a knight of great stature, whose armour was of azure and gold, and bearing in his shield a golden Lion, in a silver field; at his feet he held a damsel by the hair of the head, the beauty of which deserved not such usage; he held his sword drawn in his hand, with which he threatened her, saying, that if she did not consent he would cut off her head.

Not far off, he espied another knight lying among the green leaves, who laughed at this pitiful sight heartily, beholding what hard shift the damsel made to help herself: and after he had laughed a good while, he said, It doth me good to see you take such great

pains, for by this means I shall be eased of such labour, when I come to take my pleasure on her.

He of the Damsels seeing such villainy in men who seemed equipped for far different deeds, and that he could not cross the river by reason of its depth, called out to him not to treat the damsel thus, for one who wore such goodly arms was bound rather to protect women than to wrong them. He who held her by the hair lifted up his eyes at this, and seeing him on the other side, said, I suppose you venture to reprove me, because the water is between us, and you think I cannot come to chastise you; but you are deceived, for I know the fords, and have a swift horse; so if you are wise you will make off in time. Let him be! cried his comrade, for I think I see petticoats of many colours in his company; and perhaps after we are tired with this, we may find better choice among them. I beseech you, quoth he of the Damsels, show me the ford! for I would rather feel the force of your blows, than see them tried upon so weak a thing as a woman.

If you desire that, said the one, swim for it, for the ford is far off; and saying this he again laid hand on the damsel. But such was the wrath which the good knight felt at seeing this foul action, that forgetful of all danger, he fastened his shield on his breast and leapt in, and as the river though deep was not wide, presently gained the further side. The knight that lay among the green leaves said to his companion, Do not disturb yourself, but do what you are about; and while you are taming her, I will tame this fellow. How that may be I know not, quoth he of the Damsels; but this I know, that I am on the right side of the water, where I can show you how little you shall have your will upon this damsel, and how much less you shall chuse among mine. And then putting forth all his might, he soon laid the other, though he was a doughty one, on the earth, without his left arm. And leaving him stretched out he turned to the other, who leaving the damsel, came to help his companion. But as he had been the principal in this villainy, he of the Damsels being full melancholick, laid hands on him in such wise, that

he demolished his armour first, and then his flesh and bones; till the other having no other hope of life, thought it best to crave aid at her hands, whom he sought to have abused. I beseech you, Lady, said he, let your virtue be greater than my misdeeds, and intreat this knight to save my life, for as it is for your cause, peradventure for the love of you also he may spare me. He of the Damsels held his hand, to see what she would command; for having eyed her, he saw that she was one whose will deserved to be obeyed. She had not yet recovered sufficiently from her fear to be able to speak; but at length pity for the state in which she saw him prevailing over her anger for the wrong which he would have done her, she said, I beseech you, Sir, since the works of this wicked man have already in part received their due punishment, that you give him his life, to use it better in future, or to end it according to his misdeeds. Who do you think, Lady, he replied, could see you, and refuse to do whatever you should enjoin? This knight deserves severe chastisement; but all rules are to be broken through for you. Then he ordered

him and his companion to go as well as they could to the court of king Recindos, and in his name present themselves before the queen's ladies, and relate what they had done, and swear never to wear armour again, without it were their pleasures to suffer them; and if they obtained that permission, never to employ arms in disservice of any one. All this they promised, being in such fear that they would gladly have accepted any terms of life, though they had been far more rigorous. Their esquires made a litter, whereon they laid the last knight, who being the worse wounded of the two, could not go on horseback; the other mounted, and so as well as they could they set off on their journey.

He of the Damsels then walked down the river to see if he could discover a ford, where his horse might be brought him; and he took the damsel in his hand, who was still so little recovered from the fear she had been in, as not to remember that her squire was tied to the foot of a tree, with a gag in his mouth; but now calling him to mind, they turned back to release him. Hard by them

he two palfreys were fastened to the boughs; he knight bade him mount one, and ride along the river side till he found some place where he could pass and bring him his horse.

In the mean while that the squire went about that he was commanded, he unarmed himself, to dry his garments which were full of water; and then he questioned with the damsel, how she happened into that place, and upon what occasion the knights so sought to force her.

Sir, she replied, I was born in this country, and am somewhat of kin to the lady Miraguarda, of whom it may be you have heard. The name of that lady, replied he of the Damsels, is renowned so far and wide, that I know not where it can be unknown. So it is then, said the damsel, that it being some time since I had seen her, I was now going thither with leave obtained of my mother, when I chanced to meet with these two knights, who demanded of me to what place my journey lay: I then mis-doubting no harm, declared unto them the whe

state of my journey; whereupon one of these knights said to his companion, I think it good, in revenge of the shame we have received at the castle of Almourol, that we should ease our anger on this damsel, since she is a handsome one, and belongs to the house. The other knight being equal with his fellow in this ungracious intent, did presently agree. So they cast lots which of them should abuse me first, and it fortuned to fall on him whom you saw pulling me so cruelly by the hair of the head. And because my squire cried aloud, they dealt with him as you have seen. But it pleased God, that to prevent their purpose you came and succoured me in good time.

Certes, lady, answered the knight, I rejoice that it was my chance to be your rescue; yet had it been better for me not to have come hither at all, such a wound have I received by your singular beauty. It is not much that they should have sought to force you, since your eyes have forced me. I beseech you therefore bestow that on me

by gentleness, which they would have taken from you perforce.

The damsel noting his words, regarding his sweet countenance, remembering his noble behaviour and knightly courtesy, made him answer, but I know not how: if it were incident to his purpose, he is best able to answer it; if not, then there was no harm done. A new accident willeth me to let them alone, and hearken to the damsel's squire, who now came hastening back, saying, Methinks, Sir, there are more robbers than could have been supposed in this valley! Help your company, for a knight in black arms is carrying away one of your damsels, who seems to be the chief of them; and because she will not willingly consent, his squire is got up behind her to ride off with her by force. So greatly was he enraged at hearing that they were forcing away Arlanza, that without waiting to arm himself completely, he threw himself a second time into the river, telling the damsel to cross with her squire, and join the others, for he would be with them presently.

As soon as he had passed, he heard great lamentations among them, and perceived Polifema come towards him, crying and tearing her hair, that he should make haste to succour her mistress; but the knight that carried her away had found his horse grazing, and hamstrung him to prevent pursuit:—he was fain therefore to follow on foot; and such was his fortune, that before they had got half a league, he came up with them; for Arlanza being strong and of great stature, the squire could not manage her so well but that she oftentimes got off the palfrey, and before he could place her on again, some delay was occasioned; and moreover the beast went slowly, being tired and unable well to bear them both. He of the Damsels came up when she was on the ground, and he who carried her off was striving to put her again on horseback; then he clapt on his helmet, which hitherto he had borne in his hand that it might not heat him, and without speaking a word, made at him. The knight put himself in a posture of defence; but Arlanza, who had a manly heart, and was now made stronger by her anger, got up, and caught

hold of his right arm, and being of the race of the giants, held it so firmly that he could make no use of it, so that he of the Damsels, who did not dare to strike him for fear of hurting her, without any opposition took him in his arms.

Now he was marvellously strong, and the melancholy which he resented making him still stronger, he griped him so hard that he fairly took away his senses, and then threw him to the ground, meaning to cut off his head: but presently thinking it better to send him also to the ladies of the queen of Spain, before whom he was desirous of appearing well, he bade his own squire, who was with tears beseeching mercy, disarm him; and when he came to himself he commanded him to declare his name. I am called Rocamor, said the knight, a friend to those two knights which you vanquished on the other side of the river; and as I could not succour them, in revengement of their injury I intended to carry away this lady.

Well then, quoth he, accomplish the charge

I shall commit to you, or you shall lose your life and your wicked intentions at once. He answered, I will do any thing which you shall command, so that I may not die thus.

I will then, said he of the Damsels, that you presently take your way to the king of Spain's court, and there present yourself to the ladies attendant on the queen, reporting to them what hath passed between you and me; and you shall never while you live bear arms again, without it shall please them to licence you. This is that you may follow the same law as your friends. Who shall I say has sent me? said the other. The knight of the Damsels, he replied, for so they call me; and this journey you must take upon your squire's palfrey, for I shall take your horse in the place of that which you have killed for me. So mounting it, and placing Arlanza on a palfrey which was brought her, he returned to his company, talking to her as they went on with less anger than he had resented when he came up. Lady, said he, great must the cause be that should make me go from you again, and leave you to the courtesy of the *knights of this* land.

When he was come to the rest of his company, he saw amongst them Silviana, which was the name of her whom the knights would have ravished, and they all came with great joy to meet him, and embraced Arlanza, as if they were meeting her after a long absence.

The night drew on apace, and there they concluded to pass that night, because they knew of no other provision near at hand; every one took a modicum of their small refection, and afterward they laid them down to their rest: but Silviana could not suffer any sleep to enter her eyes, for the remembrance of what had past with her deliverer kept her waking: as for him, the thoughts which might else have spoilt his sleep were at an end, and he slept soundly, according to his condition.

END OF VOL. III.

Printed by W. Pople,
22, *Old Boswell Court, Strand.*